

---

Dr. *WELWOOD's*  
**MEMOIRS**

---



---

DEAN E. WOODS

MEMOIR

---

MEMOIRS  
Of the Most  
Material Transactions  
IN  
ENGLAND,  
FOR  
The Last Hundred Years,  
Preceding the Revolution in 1688.

---

By JAMES WELWOOD, M. D.  
Physician in Ordinary to His Majesty, and  
Fellow of the College of Physicians, *London*.

---

The Third Edition Corrected.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for *Tim. Goodwin*, at the *Queen's-Head* against *St. Dunstan's Church* in *Fleetstreet*. 1700.

4483-6

1805.5.5

English Literature

1941

1941

1990

18

1940

1910-1911

11

1900

[illegible]

100

TO THE  
KING.

SIR,



THE Great Patrons  
of Liberty have not  
thought it below  
them to become the  
Patrons of History:  
And any thing of that kind which  
concerns *England*, does naturally  
claim



## *Epistle Dedicatory.*

claim the Protection of a Prince, who by his Valour and Conduct has not only Restor'd to the *English* Nation that Figure they had lost in the World for near an Hundred Years past, but has rais'd them to a Greater than ever they had before: A Prince, who in all He has done for the Common Safety of *Europe*, could have no Brighter Examples to follow, than those of his own Family: For when Others have fought for Dominion and Power, vain empty Notions, and destructive to Mankind; It has ever been a Glory peculiar to the House of *Nassau*, to have fought for *LIBERTY*, the Noblest Cause, and the Greatest Stake that Mortals can contend for.

Let some Princes pretend to Fading Lawrels, by depopulating Countries, oppressing their Neighbours,

## *Epistle Dedicatory.*

bours, and enslaving Free People; The surest and best way to transmit a Glorious Name to Posterity, is to relieve the Oppress'd, break off their Fetters, and set the World free.

These require no varnish to set off their true Lustre; whilst those are oblig'd to make use of false Colours to palliate the highest Injustice. Let them value themselves upon a Greatness that's borrow'd from Schemes that could hardly fail, as being transmitted to them from the long Experience of the Ablest Ministers, and most Refin'd Statesmen of the Age: That Prince, who without these Helps at his first Appearance on the Stage, has by the mere Strength of his own Genius surmounted Difficulties that would have pall'd any Courage but his own, and at length has broke all those Measures that had of a long

## *Epistle Dedicatory.*

time been concerting towards the enslaving of *Christendom*, cannot fail to make one of the Noblest and Brightest Figures in History.

If it be the Prerogative of an Almighty Power and Goodness to set Bounds to the Raging Sea, it must be the highest and most justifiable Imitation of It, to put a Stop to the Ambition of Men, and to shelter Nations from their Fury. It is in this sense chiefly, that Kings may be called Gods: And it is pity that the Lives of such were not as Immortal as their Deeds.

The Memory of that Prince must be lasting, who, in all the Wars he has been engag'd in, and in all the Treaties that have been made to restore Peace to his Countrey, has never made any Terms for Himself; except once, when the Interest  
of

## *Epistle Dedicatory.*

of Three Kingdoms, and his Own, were become one and the same.

When succeeding Ages shall see scarce any other Coin in *England* but of one Stamp, they must look back with Amazement upon the Reign of a Prince whose Image it bears; and wonder how it was possible, That during the Heat of the most Expensive War that ever was, so vast a Treasure could be new minted, and at so prodigious a Loss: While at the same time they will commend and bless a People, that with so much cheerfulness assisted Him with Supplies suitable to such Mighty Undertakings. They will be no less surpriz'd to find, That amidst a great many Hardships and Disappointments which could not be avoided, His Armies follow'd him with an Inviolable Fidelity and Inimitable Courage: And will  
hardly



## *Epistle Dedicatory.*

hardly believe, That it was Within the Compass of Human Prudence to Cement so many Jarring Interests, and unite so many Princes of different Religions into one Alliance, and to influence their firm Adherence to that Alliance, till the Glorious Conclusion of a General Peace.

S I R,

All these Great Things were reserv'd for Your MAJESTY, which will be Admir'd and Extoll'd by Posterity, no less than they are by the Present Age: And it's but reasonable that the Memory of such Actions should live for ever. The following Sheets, containing a Short View of the various Disposition of Affairs in *England* for a whole Century before Your MAJESTY's Happy Accession to the Crown, I  
humbly

*Epistle Dedicatory.*

humbly beg Leave to Lay at Your  
MAJESTY's Feet, with the  
most profound Submission and Du-  
ty, that becomes,

*May it please Your Majesty,*

*Your Majesty's most Humble,*

*most Faithful, and most*

*Obedient Subject and Servant,*

**James Welwood.**

**TO**

Epistle Dedicatory

TO THE  
HONOURABLE  
THE LORDS OF THE  
JURIES

IN PARLIAMENT  
ASSEMBLED  
BY  
THE  
HONOURABLE  
THE LORDS OF THE  
JURIES  
IN PARLIAMENT  
ASSEMBLED  
BY  
THE  
HONOURABLE  
THE LORDS OF THE  
JURIES

James Watson  
Author  
of the  
History of the  
County of  
Dumfries  
and  
Galloway  
in Scotland  
1794

---

## To the Reader.

**T**HESE Sheets were writ  
some Years ago, by the En-  
couragement of One whose  
Memory will be ever Sacred to Poster-  
ity. It's needless to mention the Occa-  
sion: And they had not been publish'd  
now, if a Surreptitious Copy of a Part  
of the Manuscript, had not crept  
abroad. I can hardly expect they  
should please in an Age like this, that  
is fond only of what is writ for, or  
against a Party: For I have trac'd  
Truth as near as I could, without espou-  
sing any one Interest or Faction. I hope  
I may venture to say, That I have tread  
as softly as was possible over the Graves  
of the Dead, and have not aggravated  
the Errors of the Living. As to the  
latter,



## To the Reader.

latter, it's enough that we are deliver'd from their Power, without insulting over their Misfortunes; and it is unworthy of a Generous Mind, to trample upon those that are already down.

Most of the Accounts I have seen of the Transactions of those Times are partial to some one Side, which being one of the greatest Blemishes of History, I have endeavour'd to avoid. But whether I have fallen into the same Error my self, it is the Reader must be now Judge. I leave Satyr and Panegyrick to others. I envy no man the Art of making Court to the Great by Flattery, and have not ill Nature enough for Detraction.

The Design of these Memoirs being only to give a short Idea of the Thread of Affairs in England, for the Space of a Hundred Years, it is not to be expected that I should have observ'd the Rules of a Regular History, much less any Niceness of Method, or Exactness

## To the Reader.

ness in the Narration. As to the Style, I have taken very little pains about it; and all I have aim'd at, is to be understood.

In the Account I have given of the Last Reign, I would not be thought to Reflect upon the Roman-Catholicks in general, for what a Party among them is chargeable. They were chiefly the Bigots of some Religious Orders, and the New-Converts, that advis'd and carried on those Violences which in the end overturn'd their Master's Throne: And it is hop'd the Roman-Catholicks have reason to be satisfied with their Condition under the present Reign, since they enjoy an unenvied Liberty of their Religion, without incurring the Hatred of their Fellow-Subjects for being in a Design to overturn the Establish'd Church; which was their Case under the late King James. And as I am far from wishing them less Liberty than they have, yet cannot but regret the

Hard

## To the Reader.

*Hard Usage which the Protestants meet with in other Countries, and wish they were but as well treated there, as the Roman-Catholicks are here.*

*Before I have done, I beg leave to take notice of a Pamphlet that came out last Summer, call'd Cursory Remarks upon the Proceedings of the Last Session of Parliament. The Gentleman that wrote it, had not only the Honesty to publish an Answer to his own Book, but in that Answer to insinuate that I was the Author of it. All the Use I shall make of this unusual Liberty of the Press, is to declare, That I have not publish'd any one Paper, Pamphlet, or Book, these Six Years: And though I have but little Leisure, and yet less Inclination to appear again in Print, yet if ever I alter my Resolution, and publish any thing hereafter, I will certainly put my Name to it; as I have done to these Memoirs.*

**T H E**

# THE CONTENTS.

<b>T</b> <i>HE Excellencies of the English Constitution and the various Changes that have happen'd in it,</i>	Pag. 1
<i>The State of England under Queen Elizabeth,</i>	3
<i>Her Character,</i>	5
<i>The Character of her Ministers ; particularly of Walsingham, Cecil, &amp;c. and of the Members of the House of Commons in her time,</i>	8
<i>Her Conduct towards Mary Queen of Scots,</i>	15
<i>King James the First's Accession to the Crown, and the Condition of England under his Reign,</i>	19
<i>His Character,</i>	20
<i>b</i>	<i>The</i>



## The Contents.

<i>The Character and Death of Prince Henry,</i>	23
<i>The Character of the Queen of Bohemia; and King James's Conduct in the Buſi- neſs of the Palatinate,</i>	27
<i>The Fate of Sir Walter Raleigh,</i>	28
<i>King James's Conduct in the Interdict of Venice,</i>	34
<i>The Affair of Overall's Convocation; and how reſented by King James,</i>	36
<i>His Letter to Dr. Abbot, on that Occa- ſion,</i>	38
<i>King Charles the Firſt's Acceſſion to the Crown; and the Condition of England at that time,</i>	42
<i>The Breach betwixt Archbiſhop Abbot, and Biſhop Laud,</i>	ibid.
<i>The Riſe of King Charles's Troubles; and the firſt and ſecond War with the Scots,</i>	46
<i>The meeting of the Parliament, November 1640.</i>	50
<i>The Fall and Character of Wentworth, Earl of Strafford,</i>	52
<i>The Fall and Character of Archbiſhop Laud,</i>	59
<i>The Famous Petition and Remonſtrance of the ſtate of the Nation; and the King's Answer,</i>	66
<i>His coming to the Houſe of Commons in Perſon,</i>	

## The Contents.

<i>Person, to demand the Five Members ; and the Consequences of it,</i>	67
<i>His leaving the Parliament, and the be- ginning of the Civil Wars ; and who be- gan it,</i>	71
<i>The Treaty of Uxbridge, how unsuccessful ; and the Marquis of Montros's fatal Letter the Cause,</i>	73
<i>The Character and Fall of King Charles the First,</i>	79
<i>His Opinion of Defensive Arms in the bu- siness of Rochel,</i>	84
<i>The Character of the Favourite Bucking- ham,</i>	89
<i>The true Cause of the Scot's coming into England, being a forg'd Letter,</i>	96
<i>King Charles's design before his Death to Resign the Crown : And the Army's to set up the Duke of Gloucester,</i>	103
<i>His consulting the Sortes Virgilianæ,</i>	105
<i>The Usurpation and Character of Oliver Cromwell,</i>	107
<i>The Restoration of King Charles the Se- cond, and the Manner of it ; with Monk's part in it, and the Risk Monk ran in Scotland,</i>	119
<i>One of the true Causes of the Fall of Chan- cellor Clarendon,</i>	127

## The Contents.

<i>The discovery of the Popish Plot ; and its Consequences,</i>	128
<i>The Bill of Exclusion ; the design of it, and how manag'd,</i>	130
<i>The Disgrace of the Duke of Monmouth; and the Consequences of it,</i>	136
<i>The Protestant Plot, and the effects of it,</i>	137
<i>The Death of King Charles the Second, and the Suspicions about the Manner of it discuss'd,</i>	139
<i>His Character,</i>	148
<i>The Reign of King James the Second,</i>	153
<i>The Advantages and Examples he might have made use of,</i>	155
<i>His Brother's and Pope Innocent XIth's Advice to him,</i>	157
<i>His first Speech to his Privy Council,</i>	158
<i>His first Speech to his Parliament,</i>	161
<i>His Second Memorable Speech to his Parliament,</i>	162
<i>Two Letters from a Foreign Minister to their Ambassador in England, upon the occasion of this Speech,</i>	164
<i>Monmouth's Invasion, and the Grounds of it,</i>	165
<i>Some Passages out of Monmouth's Pocket-Book,</i>	171
<i>Monmouth's Character,</i>	172
<i>His</i>	173

## The Contents.

<i>His Letter in his Retirement,</i>	174
<i>King James's Speech to the Parliament upon Monmouth's Defeat,</i>	176
<i>The Parliaments Address thereupon,</i>	178
<i>The Sense of a Foreign Minister of this last Speech,</i>	180
<i>The Advances made to the Subversion of the English Constitution,</i>	182
<i>King James's Ambassy to Rome, and how received,</i>	183
<i>The Panegyricks of King James upon that occasion,</i>	187
<i>The Manner how King James had been trea- ted by another Pope, in his Marriage with the Princess of Modena,</i>	192
<i>King James grants a Toleration of Religi- on,</i>	196
<i>He assumes a dispensing Power,</i>	199
<i>He sets up an Ecclesiastical Commission,</i>	202
<i>The Suspension of the Bishop of London,</i>	203
<i>The Proceedings against Magdalen-Col- lege,</i>	206
<i>His Second Declaration for Liberty of Conscience,</i>	211
<i>The Affair of the Seven Bishops,</i>	213

*The*



## The Contents.

<i>The Birth of a pretended Prince of Wales,</i>	217
<i>A new Parliament design'd; and to what end,</i>	218
<i>The Prince and Princess of Orange's Opinion about the Penal Laws and Test; and how obtain'd,</i>	220
<i>The Army Modell'd,</i>	225
<i>The Methods us'd in Ireland; and Tyrconnel's Advancement,</i>	227
<i>The Regulating of the Corporations; and the Severities against the Protestants,</i>	233
<i>The Act of Attainder there,</i>	237
<i>The Interest that Foreign States had in England,</i>	239
<i>The Emperor's Letter to King James,</i>	241
<i>The Interest of the Prince of Orange,</i>	242
<i>The bad Circumstances of the House of Orange at the Birth of the Present Prince of Orange, now King of England,</i>	243
<i>How he came to be Restored in Holland,</i>	245
<i>The Desolation of Holland in 1672,</i>	246

*The*

## The Contents

<i>The Reasons of that Desolation,</i>	247
<i>The Difficulty the Prince of Orange had to grapple with,</i>	252
<i>The Duke of Luxemburgh's Cruelties at Swammerdam,</i>	254

---

ME-

---

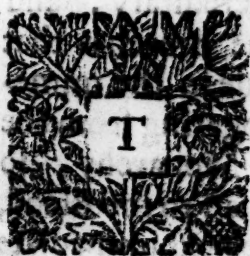
2010-2011

1875

# MEMOIRS

Of the most Material

Transactions in *England*, &c.



HERE is not a Nation in *Europe*, that from the Constitution of its Government might have promis'd it self a more firm and lasting Repose than *England*: And yet scarce any Kingdom we know upon Earth hath suffered so many and various Convulsions. As if some malevolent Planet had over-rul'd one of the best of Human Constitutions, and by an unaccountable Fatality had render'd ineffectual all the Endeavours of our Ancestors to make themselves and their Posterity  
B happy



happy under a *Limited Monarchy*. A Monarchy, in which the *Prerogative* of the Prince, and the *Liberty* of the People are so equally temper'd ; that there seems nothing wanting, that may tend to the Happiness of either.

The Excellency  
of the *English* Con-  
stitution.

The King of *England* has the Glory to Rule over a Free People ; and the People of *England* that of being subject to a Monarch, who by the Laws of the Countrey is invested with as much Power and Greatness as a Wise and Beneficent Prince can reasonably wish for. To compleat all, the Crown of *England* has been for many Ages hereditary, and fix'd in one Family : The Breaches that have been sometimes made in the immediate Line, not at all derogating from the nature of a Successive Monarchy, so long as a due Respect is had to the Blood, and for the most part the next immediate Heir, except only upon great and urgent Difficulties and Emergencies. The Crown being thus Hereditary, it might have reasonably been expected, That we should not only be strangers to the Inconveniences that arise naturally from Competitions in Elective Kingdoms, but that it should be always the Interest of the Prince that's in possession of the Throne,

so

so to govern his People, as not to put them upon the necessity at any time to break through the Succession, and pass by the next Immediate Heir.

But such is the brittle state of human things, that notwithstanding all the Advantages and Excellencies of the *English* Constitution, scarce an Age has pass'd without some remarkable Struggle, either between King and People for *Prerogative* and *Liberty*, or between Competitors for the Crown it self.

The Glory of *England* was arriv'd to a high pitch in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*. Her People liv'd at their Ease, and were happy under her Auspicious Conduct; and her oppress'd Neighbours felt the benign Influences of her great and bountiful Mind. She it was that made Head against the then *Paramount Power* of *Christendom*, and that in both the Old and New Worlds: And it was in a great measure owing to her Conduct and Fortune, that the *Spaniard* fell short of the *Universal Monarchy*.

The  
Reign of  
Q. *Elizabeth*.

To draw a Picture worthy of Queen *Elizabeth*; were a Task fit only for the Greatest Masters; since all that ever was Great or Wise in Womankind, did contribute to make up her Character. As to

Her Cha-  
racter.

her Person, she had but little of a Regular Beauty in her Face; but that was well proportion'd, and in the main very agreeable. Her Mien and Gait were Noble; and in every thing she said or did, there was something of Majesty that struck more Awe than Love: Tho when she had a mind, she could put on Charms that few were able to resist. In her Features, Person, and Mien, she had more of *Henry the Eighth*, than of the Unfortunate *Anna Bullen*, her Mother: But they were his good, and none of his ill Qualities, which she deriv'd from her Father.

Her Youth was a continued Scene of Afflictions; but she was happy in that she suffered one of the greatest, before she was capable of feeling the weight of it; for she was scarce Three Years old, when her Mother was sacrific'd to the Rage and Jealousy of her Husband. And she that had been the Year she was born, declar'd not only *Heir Apparent* of the Crown, but (which was out of the ordinary Road) *Princess of Wales*, and that by Act of Parliament, was now by another Act declar'd Illegitimate, and excluded from the Succession.

Not-

Notwithstanding this strange Reverse of Fortune, particular Care was taken of her Education, especially by her Brother *Edward the Sixth*, who lov'd her above all things, and was scarce ever pleas'd but in her Company. Before she was Seventeen Years of Age she understood perfectly well the *Latin, French, and Italian* Tongues; and was so far Mistress of the *Greek*, that she translated into *Latin* Two of *Isocrates's Orations*; one of which I have seen of her own Hand-writing, corrected by her Tutor but in Three places, whereof one is an Error only in the *Orthography*. She was indefatigable in the Study of Learning, especially *Philosophy, History, Divinity, and Rhetorick*; not forgetting both Vocal and Instrumental Musick, as far as it might become one of her Quality.

Being thus Learned, it was no wonder she form'd her Tongue and Pen to a pure and elegant way of speaking and writing, and her Mind to the Noblest Notions of Philosophy, and the highest Practice of Virtue.

Her Brother dying, Queen *Mary's* Hereditary Aversion to her upon the account of their *Mothers*, broke out with all the marks of Ill-Nature and Revenge. And



*Philip the Second*, who prov'd afterwards her greatest Enemy; was the Person that preserv'd her Life; but it was upon a mere political Design; which, however, miscarried. During all that Reign the Princess *Elizabeth* was tost from one Confinement to another; being oblig'd many times to suffer Indignities far unworthy of her Birth; till at last, by the Death of Queen *Mary*, she was call'd from a Prison to a Throne, at the Age of Twenty five Years. Upon receipt of the News of her Sister's Death; and that she herself was proclaim'd Queen, it's said she fell down upon her Knees, and after a short silence broke out with these words of the *Psalmist*, *A Domino factum est istud, & est mirabile in oculis nostris*: Which Words she took afterwards for her *Motto* in some of her Gold Coin.

During all the time of her Reign she would never allow her *Title* to be debated or reason'd upon, nor so much as explain'd or vindicated. She thought it sufficient that she wore the Crown, and was resolv'd, and knew well how to maintain it upon her Head, without the help of Paper-Arguments. She receiv'd with Indignation a Proposition that was made to her, to have her *Title* asserted in Parliament:

liament: And scorn'd to Repeal even the *Act* which declar'd her Illegitimate, and incapable to succeed.

Her Reign was long and glorious, being lov'd of her People, fear'd and admir'd by her Enemies, and attended with constant success in all her Enterprizes. Never Prince was better serv'd, nor more happy in the choice of her Servants; and no Age can instance such a Set of able Ministers as she had. Her Court at home was the quiet and happy Seat of the *Muses*, while her Fleets and Armies abroad gather'd *Lawrels* every where for their Mistress and themselves.

She had to perfection the art of pleasing her Parliament; and she and they never parted in discontent, but with the highest proofs of mutual Confidence. What sort of men they were that composed the House of Commons during her Reign, and of how different a stamp from those in that of her *Successor*, is best express'd in the Words of Sir Robert Naunton, Secretary to King *James*, who was a Member of Parliament in both Reigns; which may not be improper to insert in the *Appendix*.

*Appendix,*  
Numb. 1.  
pag. 261.  
The Character of the Members of Parliament in *Q. Elizabeth's* Reign.

If Queen *Elizabeth* can be properly said to have had *Favourites*, they were

B 4

chiefly

Naunton's  
Fragmenta  
Regalia.

chiefly the Earls of *Leicester* and *Effex*; but she never fail'd to humble them upon every occasion, where they presum'd too much upon her Favour. The One she recall'd with Ignominy from his Government of the *United Provinces*, for behaving himself haughtily in his Office: And at another time, upon his threatening *Bower*, the *Usher of the Black Rod*, to have him turn'd out of his Place for stopping one of his Retinue at the *Queen's Bed-chamber Door*, she told him with a severe Frown, accompanied with an Oath, *My Lord, I had a mind to do you good, but you must not expect a Monopoly of my Favours: I have other Subjects to shew my Bounty to; and I will give and take back again, when, and as often as I please. If you pretend to command here, I'll find ways to humble you. I know of no Master, but I will make you know there is a Mistress. And take care upon your peril, that no hurt be done Bower, for I'll make you answer for him.* The Misfortune of the Earl of *Effex* every body knows: Though other-ways a brave Gentleman, and endow'd with excellent Qualities, yet he valued himself too much upon the *Queen's Favour*; which together with the Contrivances of his Enemies hurried him on

to

to Courses that in the end lost him his Head.

A Monarch supported with a *Burleigh*, a *Walsingham*, a *Salisbury* for the Cabinet, a *Nottingham*, a *Drake*, a *Raleigh* for War; with a great many others equally fit for both, could scarce fail of being great and fortunate, nor can any thing reflect more Lustre upon her Wisdom, than her choice of such men.

*Walsingham* was a Pattern for all State-men to copy after. By his Vigilance and Address he preserv'd his Mistress's Crown and Life from daily Attempts and *Conspiracies* against her; and by a refin'd piece of Policy defeated for a whole Year together, the Measures *Spain* had taken for fitting out their *Armado* to Invade *England*.

The Character of Sir Francis *Walsingham*.

The vast *Preparations* that were making for a considerable time in *Spain*, kept all *Europe* in suspense, and it was not certain against whom they were design'd; though it was the general Opinion, they were to subdue the *Netherlands* all at once; which *Spain* was sensible could not be done without a greater Force by Sea as well as Land, than had been hitherto employ'd for that Service. Queen *Elizabeth* thought fit to be upon her Guard,



Guard, and had some Jealousies that she might be aim'd at ; but how to find it out, was the difficulty, which at length *Walsingham* overcame.

He had Intelligence from *Madrid*, That *Philip* had told his *Council*, that he had dispatch'd an express to *Rome* with a Letter writ with his own Hand to the *Pope*, acquainting him with the true Design of his Preparations, and asking his Blessing upon it ; which for some Reasons he would not yet disclose to them, till the return of the Courier. The Secret being thus lodg'd with the *Pope*, *Walsingham* by the means of a *Venetian* Priest retain'd at *Rome* as his Spy, got a Copy of the Original Letter, which was stolen out of the *Pope's* Cabinet by a Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber, who took the Keys out of the *Pope's* Pocket while he slept. How upon this Intelligence *Walsingham* found a way to retard the *Spanish* Invasion for a whole Year, by getting the *Spanish* Bills protested at *Genoa*, which should have supplied them with Money to carry on their Preparations, being properly a Mercantile Affair, is needless here to mention.

I shall only give one Instance more of *Walsingham's* dexterity in employing and in-

instructing his Spies how to get him Intelligence of the most secret Affairs of Princes. The Court of Queen *Elizabeth* had reason to have an Eye upon the King of *Scots*, as being the next Heir to the Crown, and who they knew was courted with all possible Insinuations into the *French* Interest. In order to fathom King *James's* Intentions, there was one *Wigmore* sent to *Scotland*, who pretending to be disoblig'd in *England*, fled thither for Protection. Sir *Francis Walsingham* gives him above Ten Sheets of Paper of Instructions, all writ with his own Hand, which I have read in the *Cotton Library*, so distinct and so digested, as a Man of far inferior parts to *Wigmore* could hardly fail to be a Master in his Trade. In these Papers he instructs him *how to find out King James's Natural Temper; his Morals; his Religion; his Opinion of Marriage; his Inclinations to Queen Elizabeth, to France, to Spain, to the Hollanders, and in short, to all his Neighbours.* He likewise directs him how to behave himself towards the King, *At Table; when a Hunting; upon his receiving good or bad News; at his going to Bed;* and indeed in all the Publick and Private Scenes of his Life. *Walsingham* was not mistaken in his

his Man; for though there past a constant Correspondence betwixt them, *Wizmore* liv'd in the greatest Favour and Familiarity with King *James* for Nine or Ten years together, without the least Suspicion of his being a Spy.

*Walsingham* also laid the Foundation of the *Civil Wars* in *France*, and in the *Low Countries*, which put a final stop to the vast Designs of the *House of Austria*. Upon which occasion he told the Queen at his Return from his Embassy to *France*, *That she had no reason to fear the Spaniard; for though he had a strong Appetite, and a good Digestion, he had given him such a Bone to pick, as would take him up Twenty Years at least, and break his Teeth at last: So her Majesty had no more to do, but to throw into the Fire he had kindled, some English Fuel from time to time to keep it burning.* This Great Man after all the Services he had perform'd for his Queen and Countrey, gave a remarkable Proof at his Death how far he had preferr'd the Publick Interest to his own; for he died so poor, that his Friends were oblig'd to bury him privately in the Night, for fear his Body should be arrested for Debt. *A Fault which few Statesmen since his time have been guilty of.*  
Such

Such Ministers also for Capacity and Application, were *Cecil Lord Burleigh*, and his Son the *Earl of Salisbury*, the Inheritor of his Father's great Qualities and Places. How refin'd a Politician he was, and how thoroughly acquainted with the most secret Designs of Foreign Courts, cannot be better express'd, than in the words of the same *Naunton*; to which the Reader is referr'd.

Appendix,  
Numb. 2.  
p. 264.

But to return to *Queen Elizabeth*: it appears by her whole Conduct she had no Inclination to Marriage, being loth to share her power with any other. It's true, she seem'd sometimes to give Ear to Propositions that were made her by several Princes; but this was done either to gain time, or manage their Friendship to her own Ends. When the Parliament address'd her to Marry, she handsomly excus'd her self in a Pathetick Speech, concluding with this Expression; *To me, said she, it shall be a full satisfaction both for the Memorial of my Name, and for my Glory also, if when I shall let my last Breath, it be engraven upon my Marble Tomb, Here lies Elizabeth, who reign'd a Virgin, and dy'd one.* The whole Speech is of so Noble a Strain, that it deserves a place in the *Appendix*.

Appendix,  
Numb. 3.  
p. 267.

She



She was very sparing of *Honours*; in-  
 somuch that Sir *Francis Walsingham* had  
 been employ'd in several Embassies and  
 other Matters of State for many Years,  
 before she could be prevail'd with to make  
 him a Knight, notwithstanding it appears  
 that he frequently ask'd it, and particu-  
 larly in a Printed Letter of his to *Cecil*.  
 The Honour of Knighthood, though  
 often prostituted since, was in so great  
 Esteem in her Reign, that a Gentleman  
 of *Lincolnshire* having rais'd Three hun-  
 dred men for her Service at *Tilbury Camp*  
 upon his own Interest, told his Wife at  
 parting, that he hop'd thereby to deserve  
 the Queen's Favour so far, as that she  
 should be a Lady at his Return.

She had a particular Friendship for  
*Henry* the Fourth of *France*; and to her  
 in a great measure he ow'd his Crown.  
 She never laid any thing more to heart  
 than his changing his Religion: And it  
 was a long time before she could be  
 brought to believe it. But when she re-  
 ceiv'd the Account of it from himself, all  
 her Constancy fail'd her; and in the Ago-  
 ny of her Grief, snatching up a Pen, she  
 writ him a short Expostulatory Letter,  
 worthy of her self, and of that melan-  
 cholly occasion; which is related in the

*Appendix.* This her Grief (says her Historian) she sought to allay by reading the Sacred Scriptures, and the Writings of the Fathers, and even the Books of *Philosophers*; translating about that time for an Amusement, *Boethius de Consolatione Philosophia*, into Elegant *Englisch*. *Cambden.*

The only Action that seems to reflect upon her Memory, was the Death of *Mary Queen of Scots*. There had been an Emulation betwixt them of a long standing, occasioned at first by the latter's assuming the Arms and Title of Queen of *England*; which it's no wonder Queen *Elizabeth* highly resented. A great many other Accidents did contribute to alienate their Affections. But when it fell out that every day produc'd some new Conspiracy against the Life of Queen *Elizabeth*, and that in most of them the Queen of *Scots* was concern'd either as a Party, or the Occasion; Queen *Elizabeth* was put upon a fatal Necessity of either taking off the Queen of *Scots*, or exposing her own Person to the frequent Attempts of her Enemies. With what Reluctancy Queen *Elizabeth* was brought to consent to her Death, and how she was deceiv'd at last in Signing the *The Affair of Mary Stuart, Q. of Scots.*

Camden.

the Warrant for her Execution, by the over-diligence of her Secretary and Privy-Council, her Celebrated Historian has given us a very full and impartial Account.

Yet Queen *Elizabeth* is not altogether excusable in this matter; for Queen *Mary* came into *England* upon a Promise made her long before. Queen *Elizabeth* sent her once a Ring, and at the same time a Message, that if at any time she wanted her Protection, she might be assured of it; and the Token betwixt them was Queen *Mary's* sending her back the same Ring. That Unfortunate Princess seeing her Affairs desperate in *Scotland*, dispatch'd a Letter to Queen *Elizabeth* with the Ring, to put her in mind of her Promise; but without waiting for an Answer, she came into *England* the very next day. They were both to be pitied, the one for her Sufferings, and the other for being the Cause of them: And I have seen several Letters in the *Cotton Library*, of Queen *Mary's* Hand, to Queen *Elizabeth*, writ in the most moving Strain that could be; most of them in *French*, being the Language she did generally write in. There was one particularly, wherein she tells her, *That her long Imprisonment*

ment had brought her to a Dropsical Swelling in her Legs, and other Diseases that for the Honour of her Sex she forbears to commit to Paper. And concludes thus, *Your most Affectionate Sister and Cousin; and the most miserable Princess that ever wore a Crown.* When such Letters as these had no influence upon Queen Elizabeth, it may reasonably be concluded, That nothing but Self-preservation could oblige her to carry her Resentments so far as she did.

To sum up the Character of this Renowned Queen in a few words: She found the Kingdom at her coming to the Throne, *in a most afflicted condition, embroil'd on the one side with a Scotch, and on the other with a French War; the Crown overcharg'd with her Father's and Brother's Debts; its Treasure exhausted, the People distracted with different Opinions in Religion; her self without Friends, with a controverted Title, and strengthen'd with no Alliance abroad.* After one of the longest Reigns that ever was, she died in Peace, leaving her Country Potent at Sea, and Rich in People and Trade; her Father's and her Brother's Debts paid; the Crown without any Incumbrance; a great Treasure in the Exchequer; the Coin brought to a

C

true



K. James I.

*true Standard; Religion settled upon a regular and lasting Basis; her self having been admir'd and fear'd by all her Neighbouring Princes, and her Friendship courted by Monarchs that had scarce ever before any further knowledge of England, but the Name. So that her Successor had good reason to say of her, That she was one who in Wisdom and Felicity of Government surpass'd all Princes since the days of Augustus.*

After all, To the Reproach of those she had made great and happy, she was but ill attended in her last Sickness; and near her Death, forsaken by all but three or four Persons; every body making haste to adore the *Rising Sun*.

With Queen Elizabeth dy'd in a great part the Glory and Fortune of the *English* Nation; and the succeeding Reigns serv'd only to render hers the more Illustrious. As she was far from invading the *Liberties of her Subjects*, so she was careful to maintain and preserve her own *just Prerogatives*; nor did ever any Prince that sat upon the *English* Throne carry the true and essential parts of Royalty further: But at the same time the whole Conduct of her Life plac'd her beyond the Suspicion of ever having sought  
Great

*Greatness* for any other end, than to make her People share with her in it.

It was not so with the Prince that succeeded her. He was the more fond of *Prerogative*, because he had been kept short of it in his Native Country. He grasp'd at an *Immoderate Power*, but with an ill Grace; and if we believe the Historians of that time, with a design to make his People *little*. If so, he had his Wish; for from his first Accession to the Crown, the Reputation of *England* began sensibly to sink; and Two Kingdoms which, disunited, had made each of them apart a considerable Figure in the World, now when united under one King, fell short of the Reputation which the least of them had in former Ages.

The  
Reign of  
K. James.

The latter Years of King *James* fill'd our *Annals* with little else but Misfortunes at home and abroad. The Loss of the *Palatinate*, and the Ruin of the Protestants in *Bohemia* through his Negligence; the Trick that was put upon him by the House of *Austria* in the business of the *Spanish Match*; and the continued Struggle betwixt him and his Parliament about Redress of Grievances, were things that help'd on to lessen his Credit abroad,

and imbitter the Minds of his Subjects at home.

Repenting of these unlucky Measures too late, King James went off the Stage, not much lamented; and left in Legacy to his Son, a discontented People; an unnecessary, expensive War; an incumbered Revenue, and an exhausted Treasury; together with the Charge of his Grandchildren by the Queen of Bohemia, that were now divested of a large Patrimony, deriv'd to them by a long Series of Illustrious Ancestors. In fine, he entail'd upon his Son all the Miseries that befel him; and left in the minds of his Subjects those Sparks of Discontent, that broke out some Years after into a Flame of Civil War, which ended in the Ruin of King Charles, and of the Monarchy withhim.

His Character.

This Prince, though his Father and Mother were esteemed the Handsomest Couple of the Age they liv'd in, was himself but a Homely Person, nor in any of his Features was to be found the least Resemblance of the Beautiful Mary Stuart, or Lord Darnly. No Prince had a more Liberal Education: And it could not well be otherwise, having the Celebrated Buchanan for his Tutor. He was acquainted

acquainted with most parts of Learning, but valued himself upon his Knowledge in *Divinity* above the rest; in which he writ some things that were much esteem'd at that time. He writ and spoke well, but in a *Stile* that border'd too much upon *Pedantry*, which was indeed the common Fault of that Age.

As to his Religion, notwithstanding all his Advances to the Pope and Papists upon the account, first of the *Spanish*, and afterwards the *French Match*, he was really *Calvinist* in most Points, but that of *Church-Government*, witness some of his Books, and his Zeal for the *Synod of Dort*. But as to *Episcopacy*, he shew'd so much Learning and Reading in his Arguments for it at the Conference of *Hampton Court*, that Archbishop *Whitgift* said, *He was verily persuaded the King spake by the Spirit of God*.

Notwithstanding his Mother was de-thron'd to make room for him, and consequently he could have no Right, but the Consent of the People while she liv'd; yet upon all occasions he was fond of being thought to have a *Divine Right* to the Crown. His Courage was much suspected; and some would ascribe his want of it to the Fright his Mother was



in upon the Death of her Favorite *David Rizio*. The Troubles of his Youth were various, occasion'd chiefly by *Factions* of Great Men that strove who should have the Management of him: But when he came of Age, he sought all occasions to be reveng'd upon such of them as were living, and the Posterity of those that were dead. *Goury's Conspiracy* being in its self so improbable a thing, and attended with so many inconsistent Circumstances, was disbeliev'd at the time it was said to have been attempted: And Posterity has swallow'd down for a Truth, what their Ancestors took for a mere Fiction.

He came to the Crown of *England* by Lineal Descent, and the Verbal Designation of Queen *Elizabeth* upon her Death-bed. And the Conspiracy wherewith *Cobham* and Sir *Walter Raleigh* were charged to set him by the *English* Throne, was no less Mystery than that of *Goury's* had been before. The only uncontroverted Treason that happen'd in his Reign, was the *Gunpowder Plot*; and yet the Letter to the Lord *Monteagle*, that pretended to discover it, was but a Contrivance of his own; the thing being discover'd to him before, by *Henry the Fourth* of *France*, through the means of

The Gun-  
powder Plot.

of *Monsieur de Rhony*, after *Duke of Sully*. King *Henry* paid dear for his Friendship to King *James*; and there is reason to believe that it was upon this account, among others, that a Party of the Church of *Rome* employ'd *Ravillack* to murder that *Great Man*.

King *James* was equally happy and unhappy in every one of his Children. Prince *Henry* was the Darling of Mankind, and a Youth of vast Hopes, and wonderful Virtues; but was too soon Man, to be long-liv'd. The *Duke of Sully* being in *England*, to congratulate King *James* upon his Accession to the Crown, laid the Foundation of a strict Friendship betwixt his Master and Prince *Henry*; which was afterwards carried on by Letters and Messages, till the Death of that King. Though it's a Secret to this day what was the real Design of all those vast Preparations that were made by *Henry the Fourth* for some time before his Death, yet certain it is, those Preparations were such as kept all *Europe* in suspense: And I have seen some Papers that make it more than probable, that Prince *Henry* was not only acquainted with the Secret, but was engag'd in the Design. But whatever it was, it prov'd

The Character of Prince Henry.

abortive, by the Murther of that Excellent King just at the time when it was to have been declar'd, his Army being ready to march. Prince *Henry* surviv'd him but two Years, and dy'd universally lamented. The World is very often willing to attribute the Untimely Death of Princes to unfair practices; and it was the general Rumour at that time, that this Prince was poison'd. Whatever was in it, there is yet in print a *Sermon* preach'd at St. *James's* upon the Dissolution of his Family, that boldly insinuated some such thing: And also Sir *Francis Bacon*, Lord Chancellor of *England*, in his Speech at the Trial of the *Earl of Somerset*, had some Reflections upon the Intimacy of that Lord with Sir *Thomas Overbury*, which seems to point that way; insomuch that there were several Expressions left out of the printed Copy, that were in the Speech. But after all, there is an Account in print of what was observable upon the Opening of Prince *Henry's* Body, under the Hand of Sir *Theodore Mayerne*, and Five other Physicians, from which there can be no Inference drawn, that he was poison'd.

Appendix.  
Numb. 5.  
Pag. 272.

The

The Second of King *James's* Children was the *Princess Elizabeth*, married to the *Electoꝛ Palatine*, who was afterwards to his Ruin elected King of *Bohemia*. It is hard to say whether the Virtues of this Lady, or her Misfortunes were greater : for as she was one of the best of Women, she may be likewise reckon'd in the number of the most unfortunate. King *James* thought to retrieve his Son in-law's lost Fortune by the way of Treaty ; but in that, and in every thing else, the House of *Austria* outwitted him ; so that the poor Prince *Palatine* gain'd nothing by his Alliance with *England*, but the hard Fate to be abandon'd by those whose Honour and Interest it was to support him. Nor had the Crown of *England* any share in the Honour of re-establishing the *Palatine* Family, which happen'd Thirty Years after ; for at the time of the *Treaty of Munster*, when that matter was settled, King *Charles the First* was so far from being in a condition to mediate for his Friends, that he was himself a Prisoner to those very Enemies, that in a few Months after the signing of that Treaty, took his Life. Of whom, being the Youngest of King *James's* Children, and of his Misfortunes, there will be too much



much occasion to speak in the following Sheets.

But to return to King *James*; as he was equally happy and unhappy in his Children, he was for the most part unhappy in his *Favourites*; being oblig'd to abandon one upon the account of *Overbury's* Murther; and coming to hate another the latter part of his Life as much as he had ever lov'd him before.

The Spanish March.

In order to obtain of the Emperor the Restoration of his Son-in-Law, he was wheedled into that Inglorious Counsel of sending the *Prince* into *Spain* for a Match that was either never design'd him, or too late: And it was more owing to *Philip the Third's* Generosity, than to King *James's* Politicks, that he ever saw *England* again. To this Friendship with *Spain* he sacrific'd his own Honour, with the Life of that Excellent Person, Sir *Walter Raleigh*. This Gentleman, after Fourteen Years Imprisonment in the Tower, upon the account of a Mysterious Treason, during which time he did oblige the World with one of the best Histories that ever was writ, came to be set at liberty, and was sent with an ample Commission, which was judg'd by Lawyers equivalent to a Pardon, to discover and take

take possession of new Countries and Mines in *America*. He gave King *James* the *Plan* of his Design, and of the Place he was to land at; which prov'd the Ruin of that Enterprize; for before he could get ready to sail from *England*, the Court of *Spain* had a Copy of it; which Sir *Walter Raleigh* found to his sad Experience was got to *America* before him, and had thereby enabled the *Spaniards* to baffle the Attempt. At his return, to please the *Spanish* Ambassador, who had got a mighty Ascendant over King *James*, this last of Queen *Elizabeth's* Favourites lost his Head upon the former Sentence of Treason, there being no other way to reach it.

All our Histories have mention'd at large the business of the *Spanish Match*; but few, or none, King *James's* Conduct in that of the *Palatinate*; which can hardly be express'd under a softer name than *one continued Infatuation* on his part. The Account of this Matter is writ with the greatest Exactness, though as favourably for King *James* as was possible, by the Learned *Spanhemius* in his History of *Louyse Juliane Electrice Palatine*, Daughter of *William Prince of Orange*, and Mother to the King of *Bohemia*, who outliv'd

*K. James's*  
Conduct  
in the bu-  
siness of  
the *Palatinate*.

liv'd her Son, and was one of the greatest Paterns of Virtue that any Age has produc'd. Referring the Reader to the Book it self, I shall only mention a few things out of it.

To make this Book and the matter of the *Palatinate* better understood, it's to be remembred, That the *Elect*or after his Marriage with King *James's* Daughter, was elected King of *Bohemia*, as the most powerful Prince, at that time, of the Empire, to oppose the House of *Austria*, and protect the Liberty of that Kingdom. He was scarce Crown'd, but he lost both his New Kingdom, and his Ancient Inheritance of the *Palatinate*, by the Battel of *Prague*, where his Army was entirely defeated, and he himself forc'd to fly, leaving *Bohemia* and the *Palatinate* both, a Prey to the Emperor.

Though the Parliament of *England* was zealous to restore the *Palatine Family* by Force of Arms, as the most effectual means to do it, and had offer'd great Supplies to that purpose; yet King *James* was so lull'd asleep with the Insinuations of *Gundamar*, the *Spanish* Ambassador, that he could be brought to no other Methods but those of Treaty. While he was sending one Embassy after ano-

another to *Vienna* and *Brussels*, the poor King of *Bohemia* seeing how little was to be expected from them, ventur'd to try his Fortune once more in the *Palatinate*; and with the Assistance of Count *Mansfield* and the Duke of *Brunswick*, beat the Imperialists in several Rencounters, and repossest'd himself of several Towns. But when he was in a fair way to be Master of the Whole, he was obliged to retire, and disband his Army, merely to please King *James*, who was possess'd of this wild Notion, *That to lay down his Arms, was the only way to get good Terms from the Emperor.* Upon which a *Treaty* was set a-foot at *Brussels*, where King *James* consented by way of Preliminary, That his Son in Law should not only wave the Title of the *King of Bohemia*, but that of *Electoꝛ Palatine*, which had not hitherto been question'd, and which the poor Prince was forc'd to comply with.

This *Treaty*, after a great many other Mortifications put upon the *Palatine* Family, and upon K. *James* himself, was by a Contrivance of the Emperor transferr'd to *Ratisbon*, and came to nothing at last, as all the other *Treaties* had done. But while the *Imperialists* were thus amusing  
King



King *James* with Terms of Accommodation, and that the King of *Bohemia* had disarm'd himself to please his Father-in-Law, *Heidleburgh*, and all the other places he had recover'd before, together with the rest of the *Palatinate*, were all seiz'd by the Emperor, except only *Frankendale*, which continued to make a vigorous Resistance. It would look like a Dream, to imagine that King *James* should oblige his Son in-Law to quit this place also, the only one left him of his whole Countrey, and that as the only effectual way to get back all the rest: Yet it's true he did so, and that at the very time that the Emperor had actually transferr'd the *Electoral Dignity* from the *Palatine Family* to the *House of Bavaria*.

The business of *Frankendale*.

For *Frankendale* being a Town then of great Strength, and the *Spaniards* lying expos'd to the daily Excursions of its Garrison, they found a way to trick King *James* out of it in this manner. *Gundomar* represents to him, That it being the only place left in the *Palatinate*, it could not hold out much longer; and that there was but one way to save it for his Son-in-Law, which was, To put it into the hands of the Governor of *Flanders* for some time, till things might be brought

to an Accomodation by the Treaty then on foot; and if there should happen any Interruption in it, then the Town should be render'd back to King *James*, for the use of his Son-in-Law, in the same Condition, together with a free Passage for Fifteen hundred Foot, and Two hundred Horse, to take possession of it, and Six Months Provisions.

King *James* being willing to do any thing, rather than break with *Spain*, agreed to this strange Proposition, and *Frankendale* was deliver'd up to the Governor of *Flanders* for Fifteen Months, under these Conditions. But the Treaty being once more broke off, and the time elaps'd, when King *James* demanded that *Frankendale* should be restor'd, it was told him, That he might have the Town, but by the Terms of the Agreement he was to have a Passage for his Troops through the *Spanish Low-Countries*; but that there was no Article, That he should have a Passage through any other Places that were in their possession in *Germany*. And thus King *James* was once more egregiously impos'd upon, for there was no way to come at the Town, but through Parts of *Germany* that were in the hands of *Spain*; and so the *Spaniards*

*niards* continued Masters of *Frankendale*.

When several other Princes were some time after upon entring into a League for Restitution of the *Palatinate*, and the House of *Austria* was beginning to doubt the Success, *Gundomar* play'd another Engine to break their Measures, by proposing a Match with the *Infanta of Spain*, for the *Prince of Wales*, as the easiest and surest way to restore the *Palatine Family*; which like all the rest, was only to amuse King *James*, and was equally unsuccessful.

It were too long to give the Detail of King *James's* Conduct in this Affair, which was all of a piece. The Author sums up the ills that attended it, in this, That thereby *the Protestant Religion was entirely rooted out of Bohemia, the Electoral Dignity transferr'd from the Palatine Family, the Palatinate it self lost, the Liberty of Germany overthrown*; and which he mentions with a sensible Regret, *the famous Library of Heidelburgh was carried to Rome, to the irreparable Prejudice of Learning*.

So that *Gundomar* had good reason to say, in one of his Letters to the Duke of *Lerna*, printed in the History of that Duke's

Duke's Life, That he had lull'd King James so fast asleep, that he hop'd neither the Cries of his Daughter nor her Children, nor the repeated Solicitations of his Parliament and Subjects in their behalf, should be able to awaken him.

There are two Passages more very observable in this Author. The Court of Spain finding King James had broke off the Spanish Match, and was brought to see how egregiously he had been abus'd in it; they ventur'd upon a bold Attempt to trouble his Affairs, by whispering in his Ears some things to make him jealous of his Son: And that a good while after, when King Charles and his Parliament were entring upon vigorous Measures to espouse the Palatine Cause, they found ways to sow Divisions between him and his People, that in progress of time broke out into a Civil War. The latter needs no Commentary; and the former is sufficiently explain'd, by what a late Author has writ in the Life of Bishop Williams, concerning that Prelate's being instrumental in making up some secret differences betwixt King James and his Son the Prince of Wales, a little before King James's Death. Spanhemius sums up what relates to this Affair, with this Remark,

D.

That

Hacket's  
Life of B<sup>e</sup>  
Williams.



*That never Prince was more oblig'd to a Sister, than King Charles the First was to the Queen of Bohemia; since it was only the consideration of her and her Children, who were then the next Heirs after him to the Crown of England, that prevail'd with the Court of Spain to permit him to see England again.*

In the Interdict of Venice.

As in most Foreign Transactions King James was unhappy; so more particularly in the difference between Pope Paul V. and the *Venetians*. There appear'd at that time a wonderful Disposition in that State to work a Reformation in the Church, and throw off the Papal Yoke. In order to advance it, King James dispatch'd Sir Henry Wotton his Ambassador to *Venice*; and hearing that *Spain* had declar'd for the Pope, he declar'd for the *Venetians*; and acquainted *Justiniani*, their Ambassador in *England*, That he would not only assist Them with all the Forces of his Kingdom, but engage all his Allies in their Defence. At Sir Henry Wotton's Arrival, the Breach between the Pope and the Republick was brought very near a Crisis; so that a total Separation was expected not only from the Court, but the Church of Rome; which was set on by the Learned Padre Paulo,

and

and the Seven Divines of the State, with much Zeal, and conducted with as great Prudence. The Ambassador at his Audience offer'd all possible Assistance in his Master's Name, and accus'd the Pope and Papacy of being the chief Authors of all the Mischiefs in *Christendom*. This was receiv'd with great Deference and Respect to King *James*: And when the Pope's Noncio objected, That King *James* was not a Catholick, and so was not to be reli'd upon; the Doge took him up briskly, and told him, That *the King of England believ'd in Jesus Christ, but he did not know in whom some others believ'd.*

King *James* had sent with *Wotton* his Premonition to all Christian Princes and States, translated into *Latin*, to be presented to the Senate; which *Padre Paulo* and the other Divines press'd might be done at his first Audience; telling him, they were confident it would have a very good effect. The Ambassador could not be prevail'd with; alledging he had positive Orders to wait till St. *James's* Day, which was not far off. This Conceit of presenting K. *James's* Book on St. *James's* Day, spoil'd all; for before that day came, the Difference was made up, and that

happy Opportunity lost. So that when he had his Audience on St. James's Day, and had presented the Book, all the Answer he got, was, *That they thank'd the King of England for his good will, but they were now reconcil'd to the Pope, and that therefore they were resolv'd not to admit of any Change in their Religion, according to their Agreement with the Court of Rome.* How little Reputation he acquir'd in the Matter of the *Venetian Interdict*, appears yet more plainly in this, That in all the numerous Collections we have of *Letters* that pass'd on that Subject between the Cardinals of *Joyeuse* and *Perron*, the Marquis de *Fresnes* and *Henry IV.* there is not the least notice taken of King *James* or his Embassy.

It may not be impertinent in this place, to say something of that *Convocation* that was held in the beginning of this King's Reign; Which had never been taken notice of in History, if it were not for the use that was made of it in our late Debates about the Lawfulness of the *Oaths* to his present Majesty. This *Convocation* goes under the name of *Overall's Convocation*, and has been of late years often mentioned in Print upon that account.

And

And since a very Learned *Divine* has told us upon a solemn Occasion, That it was the *Canons* of this *Convocation* that first Enlightned his Eyes, and perswaded him of the Lawfulness of the *Oaths* to his Majesty, I shall only take notice of a few things about them.

Dr. Skey-  
lock.

It's very probable, that this *Convocation* was call'd, to clear some Doubts that King *James* might have had, about the Lawfulness of the *Hollanders* their throwing off the *Monarchy* of *Spain*, and their withdrawing, for good and all, their Allegiance to that Crown: Which was the Great Matter then in Agitation in most Courts of *Christendom*.

It appears plainly by some of those *Canons*, that the High-flown Notions of *Prerogative* and *Absolute Obedience*, which came afterwards into fashion, were not much known at that time: at least, the Clergy were not of that Opinion. It's true, This was the first time that the Distinction of a King *de jure* and *de facto*, was ever mention'd as a Point of Divinity, or a Doctrin of the Church; though it had been taken notice of before, and that but once, as a Matter of Law, in an Act of Parliament of *Henry 7*. But these *Canons* did never receive the Royal Ap-  
D 3
probation,



*probation*, and therefore are in the same case as if they had never been.

King *James* thought these Points too nice to be much touch'd upon, and was highly displeas'd with the *Members* of that *Convocation* for meddling in Matters which he thought were without their Sphere. Thereupon he writ that angry Letter to Dr. *Abbot* (afterwards Bishop of *Sarum*), the Original of which it was my fortune to fall upon, and to publish upon another Occasion. It's hop'd the Reader will not be displeas'd to read it again : And it runs thus.

Good Doctor *Abbot*,

I Cannot abstain to give you my Judgment of your Proceedings in your Convocation, as you call it ; and both as Rex in folio, and unus Gregis in Ecclesia, I am doubly concerned. My Title to the Crown no body calls in question, but they that neither love you nor me ; and you guess whom I mean. All that you and your Brethren have said of a King in Possession ( for that Word I tell you, is no worse than that you make use of in your Canon ) concerns not me at all ; I am the next Heir, and the Crown is mine  
by

by all Rights you can name, but that of Conquest; and Mr. Solicitor has sufficiently express'd my own Thoughts concerning the Nature of Kingship in general, and concerning the nature of it, ut in mea persona: And I believe you were all of his Opinion: at least, none of you said ought contrary to it, at the time he spake to you from me. But you know all of you, as I think, that my Reason of calling you together, was to give your Judgments how far a Christian and a Protestant King may concur to assist his Neighbours to shake off their Obedience to their once Sovereign, upon the account of Oppression, Tyranny, or what else you like to name it. In the late Queen's time this Kingdom was very free in assisting the Hollanders both with Arms and Advice. And none of your Coat ever to'd me, that any scrupled about it in her Reign. Upon my coming to England, you may know that it came from some of your selves to raise Scruples about this Matter. And albeit I have often told my Mind concerning Jus Regium in Subditos, as in May last in the Star Chamber, upon the occasion of Hales his Pamphlet; yet I never took any notice of these Scruples, till the Affairs of Spain and Holland forc'd me to it. All my Neighbours call on me to concur in the Treaty between Holland

and Spain ; and the Honour of the Nation will not suffer the Hollanders to be abandoned, especially after so much Money and Men spent in their Quarrel : Therefore I was of the Mind to call my Clergy together, to satisfy not so much me, as the World about us, of the Justness of my owning the Hollanders at this time : This I needed not have done ; and you have forced me to say, I wish I had not, You have dipp'd too deep in what all Kings reserve among the Arcana Imperii. And whatever Aversion you may profess against God's being the Author of Sin, you have stumbled upon the Threshold of that Opinion, in saying upon the Matter, that even Tyranny is God's Authority, and should be reverenc'd as such. If the King of Spain should return to claim his old Pontifical Right to my Kingdom, you leave me to seek for others to fight for it : For you tell us upon the matter beforehand, his Authority is God's Authority, if he prevail.

Thus far the Secretary's Hand, as I take it ; the Rest follows in the King's own Hand thus : Mr. Doctor, I have no time to express my Mind farther in this thorny business. I shall give you my Orders about it  
by

by Mr. Solicitor; and until then, meddle no more in it, for they are Edge-Tools, or rather like that Weapon, that's said to cut with the one edge, and cure with the other. I commit you to God's Protection, good Doctor Abbot, and rest,

Your good Friend,

James R.

To have done with King James; it was said, that he divided his time betwixt his Standish, his Bottle, and his Hunting. The last had his fair weather, the two former his dull and cloudy; and therefore that it was no wonder his Writings were so variable; and that after he had pleaded for Witchcraft, and the Pope's being Antichrist, *Somerset's Affair* and the *Spanish Match* cur'd him of both. After having enjoy'd for the most part of his Life a firm Health, he died of a *Quartan Ague*, in the Fifty ninth Year of his Age, and with such suspicious Circumstances, as gave occasion of Enquiry into the manner of his Death, in the two first Parliaments that were call'd by his Son; all which came to nothing, by reason of their sudden Dissolutions.

King



The Reign  
of King  
Charles I.

King *Charles the First* came to the Crown under all the Disadvantages that have been mention'd; and yet the Nation might have hop'd that their Condition would be mended under a Prince of so much Virtue, as indeed he was, if the Seeds of Discontent, which were sown in his Father's time, had not every day taken deeper Root, and acquir'd new Growth, through the Ill Management of his Ministers, *rather than any wilful Errors of his own.*

B. Laud.

Some of them drove so fast, that it was no wonder the Wheels and Chariot broke: And it was in great part to the indiscreet Zeal of a *Mitred Head*, that had got an Ascendant over his Master's *Conscience* and *Councils*, that both the *Monarchy* and *Hierarchy* ow'd afterwards their Fall.

The Division  
betwixt  
Archbishop  
Abbot  
and Bishop  
Laud.

To trace this matter a little higher; there arose in the preceding Reign two opposite *Parties* in the Church, which became now more than ever exasperated against each other; the one headed by *Archbishop Abbot*, and the other by *Bishop Laud*. *Abbot* was a Person of wonderful Temper and Moderation; and in all his Conduct shew'd an unwillingness to stretch the Act of *Uniformity* beyond  
what

what was absolutely necessary for the Peace of the *Church*, or the *Prerogative* of the Crown, any further than conduc'd to the good of the *State*. Being not well turn'd for a Court, though otherwise of considerable Learning, and Gentile Education, he either could not, or would not stoop to the Humour of the Times: and now and then by an unreasonable Stiffness, gave occasion to his Enemies to represent him as not well inclin'd to the *Prerogative*, or too much addicted to a *Popular Interest*, and therefore not fit to be employ'd in Matters of Government. Upon the other hand, Bishop *Laud*, as he was a Man of greater Learning, and yet greater Ambition and Natural Parts, so he understood nicely the Art of pleasing a Court; and finding no surer way to raise himself to the first *Dignities* of the Church, than by acting a quite contrary part to that of Archbishop *Abbot*, he went into every thing that seem'd to favour the *Prerogative* of the Crown, or enforce an *Absolute Obedience* upon the Subject.

The King's urgent Necessities, and the backwardness of the Parliament to supply them, had forc'd him upon unwarrantable Methods of raising Money; and

and the readines the *Roman Catholicks* express'd to assist him in his Wants, did beget in him at first a Tenderness towards them, and afterwards a Trust and Confidence in them; which was unhappily mistaken by his other Subjects, as if he inclined to their Religion.

Among other means of raising Money, that of *Loan* was fallen upon; which met with great difficulties, and was generally taken to be illegal. One *Sibthorp*, an obscure Person, in a Sermon preach'd at the Assizes at *Northampton*, would make his Court by asserting not only the Lawfulness of this way of imposing Money by *Loan*, but that it was the indispensable Duty of the Subject to comply with it. At the same time Dr. *Manwaring*, another Divine, preach'd two Sermons before the King at *Whitehall*, in which he advanc'd these Doctrines, *viz.* *That the King is not bound to observe the Laws of the Realm, concerning the Subjects Rights and Liberties; but that his Royal Word and Command in imposing Loans and Taxes without Consent of Parliament, does oblige the Subject's Conscience, upon pain of eternal Damnation. That those who refus'd to pay this Loan, did offend against the Law of God, and became guilty of Impiety, Disloyalty,*

*Disloyalty, and Rebellion. And that the Authority of Parliaments is not necessary for raising of Aids and Subsidies.*

Every body knew *Abbot* was averse to such Doctrines: and to seek an advantage against him, *Sibthorp's* Sermon, with a Dedication to the King, was sent him by Order of his Majesty to License. *Abbot* refus'd, and gave his Reasons in writing; which Bishop *Laud* answer'd, and with his own hand Licens'd both *Sibthorp's* and *Manwaring's* Sermons. Upon this Archbishop *Abbot* was confin'd to his Countrey House, and suspended from his Function; the Administration of which was committed to Bishop *Laud*, and some others of his recommendation.

Archbishop *Abbot* died in disgrace, and was succeeded in the See of *Canterbury* by Bishop *Laud*; while in the mean time things went on from bad to worse, and hasten'd to a *Crisis*. The two first Parliaments King *Charles* had call'd, pressing him hard for Redress of *Grievances*, and pushing on the Resentments, begun in the preceding Reign; he was prevail'd with not only to dissolve them, but to leave the Nation without Parliaments for Twelve Years together; and all this  
con-



contrary to the Advice of some of the best and wisest men about him, who foresaw the ill consequences that might follow, if ever any unlucky *Juncture* of Affairs should necessitate him to call one.

The Rise  
of King  
Charles's  
Troubles.

Such a *Juncture* fell out, and the worst that could be; the manner thus: The *Scots* had been of a long time sower'd by the Encroachments they said were made upon their Rights and Liberties, and particularly in the matter of *Church-Government*. Archbishop *Laud*'s Zeal for an *Uniformity* between the two Nations in point of *Liturgy*, prov'd the fatal Torch that put the Two Kingdoms into a flame. And it was the sooner kindled, there being so much Fuel laid up for many Years, that the least Spark was enough to set fire to the Pile.

The Scotch  
Troubles.

In the Year 1637. the *Scots* had not only in a Tumultuous manner refus'd the *Liturgy* that was sent them from *England*, of Archbishop *Laud*'s composing; but had afterwards assum'd to themselves the Liberty and Power of holding a *General Assembly* of their Church, and in it to abolish *Episcopacy*, and do several other things that were judg'd inconsistent with the Duty of Subjects: Upon which they  
were

were declar'd *Rebels*; and King *Charles* thought his Honour was concern'd to reduce them to Obedience by the Sword.

Instead of venturing to call a Parliament, to enable him to prosecute this Design, he was necessitated to levy Money another way. Great Sums were rais'd by *Loan* and *Benevolence*, to which the *Roman-Catholicks* and the *Clergy* of *Land's* Faction contributed most. The King thus supplied, march'd to the *North* with a Gallant Army; and the *Scots* came as far as the *Borders* in a posture of Defence. To prevent matters coming to extremity, the *Scots* presented his Majesty with their humble *Supplication* and *Remonstrance*, setting forth *their inviolable Fidelity to the Crown*; and that they desir'd nothing more, but the peaceable enjoyment of their Religion and Liberties; and that all things might be determin'd and settled by a Free Parliament, and General Assembly. At length, through the Intercession of the Moderate Party about the King, and some of the highest Rank in both Kingdoms, his Majesty was pleas'd to comply with the desires of the *Scots*, by a solemn *Pacification*, sign'd in view of both Armies near *Berwick*, in June 1638.

This *Treaty* was but short-liv'd, and  
but

but ill observ'd on either side. The same men that counsell'd the King to the first, push'd him on to a second *War* against the *Scots*. Parliaments had been now discontinu'd for some Years together, and there appear'd no great Inclination in the King to call any more, if this emergent occasion had not fallen out. But his pressing Necessities, and this new War oblig'd him 'once more to try the Affections of his People in a Parliamentary way.

Accordingly a Parliament meets in April, 1640. at the opening of which the King acquainted them *with the Affronts he had received from the Scots*, and demanded a Supply to reduce them to their Duty by force of Arms. Both Houses shew'd a Willingness to relieve the King's Wants, and offer'd him a considerable Supply; but with this Condition, *That their Grievances might be first redress'd*; which had swell'd up to a considerable Bulk since the last Dissolution. Not only so, but the *Scots* had Friends enough in the Parliament to hinder any great matter to be done against them; and the greater part both of Lords and Commons were but little inclin'd to a War of Archbishop *Land's* kindling.

The

The King being thus disappointed, dissolv'd this Parliament as he had done the rest; when they had scarce sat a Month; and made what shifts he could to raise a new Army against the *Scots*. They upon the other hand being resolv'd not to be behind in their Preparations, enter'd into *England* with a numerous Army, compos'd for the most part of *Veteran* Officers and Troops, that had serv'd in *Germany* under *Gustavus Adolphus*, and taking *Berwick* and *Newcastle*, push'd their way as far as *Durham*.

King *Charles* came in person to *York*, and there found himself environ'd with perplexing Difficulties on all hands: The *Nobility* and *Gentry* that attended him, express'd on all occasions their dislike of the Cause, and the War they were engag'd in: The *Scots* stood firm to their ground; being flesh'd with Success: And the King was follow'd from the *South* with Petitions from the City of *London*, from several Counties, and from a considerable Number of Lords, desiring him to call a Parliament, as the only effectual Means to quiet the Minds of the People, and compose the present War without Bloodshed.

E

To



To extricate himself out of this Labyrinth, King *Charles* summon'd the *Great Council of Peers* to meet at *Tork*, to consult what was fit to be done in this Juncture; who advis'd him unanimously to enter into a Treaty with the *Scots* at *Rippon*, and to summon a Parliament to meet at *Westminster*; with both which Advices the King comply'd, and immediately issu'd our Writs for a Parliament to sit down in *November*, 1640. and adjourn'd the Treaty with the *Scots* to *London*.

No Age ever produc'd Greater Men than those that sat in this Parliament: They had sufficient Abilities and Inclinations to have render'd the King and their Country happy, if *England* had not been through a Chain of concurring Accidents ripen'd for destruction.

The Parli-  
ament.  
1641.

At their sitting down, a Scene of *Grievances* under which the Nation had long groan'd, was laid open, and all Topicks made use of to paint them out in liveliest Colours. The many Cruelties and Illegal Practices of the *Star-chamber*, and *High Commission Court*, that had alienated Peoples Minds from the *Hierarchy*, were now insist'd on to throw down those two *Arbitrary Tribunals*, and with them in  
some

some time after, the Bishops out of the House of Peers, and at length Episcopacy it self out of the Church. It was not a few of either House, but indeed all the *Great Patriots*, that concurr'd at first to make Enquiry into the *Grievances* of this Reign. Sir *Edward Hyde*, afterwards Earl of *Clarendon*, and Lord Chancellor of *England*; the Lord *Digby*; the Lord *Falkland*; the Lord *Capell*; Mr. *Grimstone*, who was chosen afterward Speaker of the House of Commons that brought in King *Charles* the Second, and was Master of the Rolls; Mr. *Holles*, since Lord *Holles*; all which suffer'd afterwards on the King's side; and in general, most of those that took the King's part in the succeeding War, were the Men that appear'd with the greatest Zeal for the Redress of Grievances, and made the sharpest Speeches upon those Subjects. The Intentions of those Gentlemen were certainly Noble and Just, and tended to the equal advantage of King and People: But the Fate of *England* urg'd on its own Ruin step by step, till an open Rupture between the King and Parliament made the Gap too wide ever to be made up again.

Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, Earl of *Strafford*, and Dr. *Laud*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, had too great a share in the Ministry, to escape being censur'd; and they were the first that felt the effects of a Popular Hatred. These two Gentlemen, and *James Duke of Hamilton*, first advis'd King *Charles* to call this Parliament; and all three fell by it, though not at the same time.

The Fall  
and Character  
of the Earl  
of *Strafford*.

The Earl of *Strafford* was a Gentleman of extraordinary Parts, a great Orator, and yet a greater Statesman: He made a considerable Figure in the first Three Parliaments of King *Charles*; and no man appear'd with greater Zeal against *Ship-money*, *Tunnage*, and *Poundage*, and other Taxes illegally impos'd upon the Subject. The Court bought him off, and prefer'd him to great *Honours* and *Places*, which lost him his former Friends, and made the Breach irreconcilable. There had been a long and intimate Friendship betwixt Mr. *Pym* and him, and they had gone hand in hand in every thing in the House of Commons. But when Sir *Thomas Wentworth* was upon making his Peace with the Court, he sent to *Pym* to meet him alone at *Greenwich*; where he began in a set Speech to sound Mr. *Pym* about

about the Dangers they were like to run by the Courses they were in; and what Advantages they might have, if they would but listen to some Offers would probably be made them from the Court. *Pym* understanding his drift, stopt him short with this Expression, *You need not use all this Art to tell me that you have a mind to leave us: But remember what I tell you, You are going to be undone. But remember, that though you leave us now, I will never leave you while your Head is upon your Shoulders.* He was as good as his Word, for it was *Pym* that first accus'd him of High Treason in the House of Commons, he carried up his Impeachment to the House of Lords, and was the chief Manager of his Tryal, and *Bill of Attainder.*

There never was a more solemn Tryal than that of the Earl of *Strafford*, whether we consider the *Accusers*, or the *Person accus'd*; the *Accusation*, or the *Defence.* As in every thing else, so in this more particularly, he express'd a Wonderful Presence of Mind, and a vast Compass of Thought, with such nervous and moving Flights of Eloquence, as came nothing short of the most celebrated *Pieces of Antiquity.* This did manifestly ap-



pear from his summing up the long Answer he made *ex tempore* to every one of the Articles against him, with this Pathetick Conclusion: *My Lords*, said he, *I have troubled you longer than I should have done, were it not for the Interest of these dear Pledges a Saint in Heaven hath left me.* At this Word he stop'd, pointing to his Children, that stood by him, and dropt some Tears; then went on, *What I forfeit for my self is nothing; but that my Indiscretion should extend to my Posterity, woundeth me to the very Soul. You will pardon my Infirmary; something I should have added, but am not able; therefore let it pass.* And now, *my Lords*, for my self, *I have been by the Blessing of God taught, That the Afflictions of this present Life are not to be compar'd to that Eternal weight of glory which shall be reveal'd hereafter.* And so, *my Lords*, even so, with all Tranquility of Mind, I freely submit my self to your judgment: And whether that Judgment be of Life or Death, *Te Deum laudamus.*

It's believed that King Charles's appearing so heartily for him, did him no good with the House of Commons: And it's confidently said, that he wrote his Majesty a Letter from the Tower, praying him

him not to intercede in his Affair; and that his not seeming to be concern'd in it, would be the best method to calm the Rage of his Enemies. But notwithstanding this Caution the King came to the House of Lords, and sending for the House of Commons, made a warm Speech in favour of the Earl; which some of his Friends took for so good News, that they went straight from *Westminster* to give him an account of it: *Strafford* receiv'd it as his *Doom*, and told them, *The King's Kindness had ruin'd him; and that he had little else now to do, but to prepare himself for Death.*

As King *Charles* was mistaken in his Intercession for the Earl of *Strafford*, so was the Earl himself much more, in neglecting the advice of his Friends against his coming up to this Parliament. It was easy to foresee there was something design'd to his Prejudice; and he had fair warning given him not to come up at that time; at least, till he saw how matters would go. He had two plausible Pretences for his absence, if he had pleas'd to make use of them; the necessity of his Presence in *Ireland*, where he was Lord Lieutenant; or in the *North of England*, where he was Lieutenant-Ge-

neral of the Army that had been rais'd against the *Scots*. But being too confident, not only of the King's Favour and his Interest among the Lords, but of the good effects an *Humble Honey Speech* might have with the House of Commons (to use his own Words), he came late at Night to Town, and took his place next Morning in the House of Lords, with an Intention to ask leave that very day to go down to the House of Commons to clear himself of the Misrepresentations he lay under.

Mr. *Pym* hearing he was come, mov'd to have the Doors lock'd, and the Keys laid upon the Table, lest any Member should give Intelligence of what they were upon: Which being done, he accus'd the Earl of *Strafford* of *High-Treason*; and an *Impeachment* was immediately drawn up, and agreed to by the House. In the mean time, it fell out unluckily for the Earl of *Strafford*, that at his coming into the House of Lords, they were upon a Debate that took them up a considerable time; and while he was waiting till that was over, the Commons came up with their *Impeachment*.

As the Earl was strangely unfortunate in most things that besel him in the latter  
 Peri-

period of his Life, he was no less in the very Opinion of the King himself, and those others that did all they could to save his life. For the King in the Speech he made to both Houses in his favour, was pleas'd to say, *That he did not think my Lord Strafford fit hereafter to serve him or the Commonwealth in any Place of Trust, no, not so much as that of a Constable.* And the Lord Digby, in the Speech he made in the House of Commons against the Bill of Attainder, for which among other things he was forc'd to fly, treats the Earl in yet much harsher Terms: *The Name of the Earl of Strafford (says he) is a Name of Hatred in the present Age by his Practices, and fit to be made a Terror to future Ages by his Punishment. I am still the same in my Opinions and Affections as to the Earl of Strafford (continues he after); I believe him to be the most dangerous Minister, the most insupportable to free Subjects that can be character'd. I believe his Practices in themselves as high, as Tyrannical, as any Subject ever ventur'd upon; and the Malignity of them highly aggravated by those rare Qualities of his, whereof God has given him the Use, but the Devil the Application. In a word (adds the Lord Digby) I believe him*



him still that *Grand Apostate to the Commonwealth*, who must not expect to be pardon'd in this world, till he be dispatch'd into the other. And yet let me tell you, Mr. Speaker, my Hand must not be at that Dispatch. Thus far a Nobleman that was entirely in the King's Interest; and for his Zeal to the Royal Cause became the most obnoxious to the Parliament.

After all, there seems to have been some Mistake about the main *Article* in his Accusation, of his advising the King to bring over the Army from Ireland to reduce England; which contributed more to the undoing of this Minister, than all the rest: For the Proof of this Article being only Words contain'd in Mr. Secretary Vane's Notes, (which are plac'd in the *Appendix*) and said to be spoke at the *Council-Table*, they do naturally refer to the Kingdom of Scotland, and not to England; the thing then under Debate, being how to reduce Scotland. And though Secretary Vane swore to the Truth of his Notes, yet it was after such a manner, as left the Matter still more dubious: And though he had sworn more positively, it was but the Testimony of One Witness, and that contradicted by Four Lords, who were then present in Council,

*Appendix,*  
Numb. 6.  
pag. 273.

Council, and who declar'd upon their Honours, *That they did not remember they heard the Earl of Strafford speak those Words.*

I cannot leave the Earl of *Strafford*, without taking notice of a silly Mistake that has gain'd some Credit in the World, as if the *Bill of Attainder* against him was of so extraordinary a nature, and so much out of all the known Methods of Justice, that the Legislators themselves were oblig'd to insert a Clause into the Body of it, *That it should never be drawn into President.* Whereas that Clause does expressly relate only to Judges in Inferior Courts; and is conceiv'd in the following words; *Provided, That no Judge or Judges, Justice or Justices whatsoever, shall adjudge or interpret any Act or Thing to be Treason, nor hear or determine any Treason, in any other manner than he or they should or ought to have done, before the making of this Act.*

As Archbishop *Laud* was nothing inferior to the Earl of *Strafford* in Parts, and much his Superior in Learning; so it is as hard to determine which of the two made a Nobler Defence at their Tryal. The Fate of the former has been the

the same with that of most Great Men, to be represented to Posterity in *Extremes*; for we have nothing writ of him, but what's either *Panegyrick*, or *Satyr*, rather than History.

That Archbishop *Land* was brought to his Tryal, and found Guilty, during the Heat of a Civil War, and when all things were tending to Confusion, was nothing strange: Nor was Serjeant *Wild's* Introduction at the opening of his Charge, any thing but what might have been expected at such a time, when he told the Lords, That *it might be said of the Great Cause of the Archbishop of Canterbury, as it was in a like Case, Repertum est hodierno die facinus, quod nec Poeta fingere, nec Histrio sonare, nec Mimus imitari potuerit.* But it was indeed strange, and none of the least of this Great Man's Misfortunes, That Three Years before, he should be declar'd by the House of Commons a Traytor, *Nemine contradicente*, at a time when there was not the least Misunderstanding betwixt the King and Parliament, being within the first Month after they sat down: And which was yet stranger, That no body was more severe upon him, than some of those that afterwards took the King's Part against the Par-

Parliament, and were at last the chief Instruments of his Son's Restoration. Whoever reads Sir *Harbottle Grimstone's* Speech upon voting his Impeachment, or *Pym's* upon carrying it up to the Lords, will be apt to think, *That scarce any Age has produc'd a Man whose Actions and Conduct have been more obnoxious to Obloquy, or given greater occasion for it.*

There was one Thread that run through his whole Accusation, and upon which most of the Articles of his Impeachment turn'd; and that was, *his Inclination to Popery, and his design to introduce the Romish Religion*: Of which his Immortal Book against *Fisher*, and his Declaration at his Death, do sufficiently acquit him. And yet, not Protestants only, but even *Roman Catholicks* themselves were led into this Mistake; otherwise they would not have dar'd to offer one in his Post a *Cardinal's Cap*, as he confesses in his *Diary* they did twice. The Introduction of a great many *Pompous Ceremonies* into the Church, the *Licensing* some Books that spoke favourably of the Church of *Rome*, and the refusing to *License* others that were writ against it, were the principal Causes of his being thus misrepresented: And indeed his Behaviour



*Appendix,*  
Numb. 7.  
p. 275.

haviour in some of these matters, as likewise in the *Star-Chamber* and *High-Commission-Court*, can hardly be accounted for; and particularly his *Theatrical* manner of Consecrating a New Church in *London*; related at length in the *Appendix*.

He was certainly, in spite of Malice, a Man of an elevated Capacity, and vast Designs; a great Encourager of Learning, and Learned Men; and spar'd no Pains nor Cost to enrich *England* with such a Noble Collection of Books and *Manuscripts* in most Languages, as look'd rather like the Bounty of a King, than of a Subject. As he left behind him many lasting Monuments of his Beneficence to the Learned World, so was he in a way to have carried it much further, if his Misfortunes had not interven'd, and depriv'd Learning of so powerful a Benefactor.

But after all; as there is seldom found a Mind so Great but has some Allay, so it seems Archbishop *Laud*, notwithstanding his excellent Endowments, was not Proof against either the *Impression of Dreams*, or *Revenge of Personal Affronts*, though never so trivial in themselves, nor the Person never so mean: Of the one,  
witness

witness his taking so particular notice in his *Diary* of several of his *Dreams*; and of the other, his carrying his Resentments so far against *Archie the King's Fool*, for a mere *Jest*, that he had him turn'd out of Court by an Order of *Council*; Which being so unaccountable a piece of Weakness in so great a Man, and done at a full Board, the King and the Archbishop present; the Order is plac'd in the *Appendix*, for a remarkable Instance how far the Greatest of Men may at some times be left without a Guard against Passion.

*Appendix,*  
Numb. 8.  
p. 278.

To return to King *Charles*, he did every thing that was possible, to give satisfaction to the Parliament, or could be reasonably expected from a Gracious and Beneficent Prince. He pass'd the *Bill for Attainting the Earl of Strafford*, though with reluctancy, as believing he deserv'd not such hard measure: He took away *Monopolies*, that had been a great Discouragement to Trade: He express'd himself to their Contentment in the matters of *Loan, Ship-money, Tunnage and Pannage*, and other unwarrantable Methods that had been us'd in raising Money; and shew'd a settled Resolution to comply with

with them in every thing that might tend to the Ease and Security of the Subject. As in the preceding Parliament he had pass'd the *Petition of Right*, so in the beginning of this he had agreed to the Acts for *Triennial Parliaments*, and for *abolishing the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts*, which had been great *Grievances*, and with Chearfulness pass'd that Act which seem'd inconsistent with his own just Prerogative, That *that Parliament should not be dissolv'd, but by Act of Parliament; nor prorogu'd or adjourn'd, but by their own Consent.*

The King having upon these Concessions receiv'd the Publick Thanks of Both Houses, and the loud Applauses of his People, took a Journey for *Scotland* in *August*, 1641. to settle matters there, that requir'd his Presence; leaving the Parliament sitting, which they continu'd to do for some time, and then adjourn'd themselves to *October* following. At the King's going away, Affairs had been already settled betwixt the two Kingdoms by an *Act of Pacification*, and both Armies order'd to be disbanded, the *Scots* returning home for that purpose.

While

While the King was in *Scotland*, the *Irish Rebellion* broke out, which became a new Bone of Contention between the King and the Parliaments of both Nations. He took what Measures were possible in *Scotland* about suppressing that Rebellion, and made what haste he could back to *England* to concert with the Parliament there, what was further to be done towards it ; leaving the *Scots*, as he said himself, *a contented People*; and every thing settled to their mind both in Church and State.

The *Irish*  
Rebellion

He return'd to *London* the latter end of *November*, and was receiv'd with all demonstrations of Affection. The *Lord-Mayor* and Aldermen, the Nobility, Gentry, and Train'd-Bands met him without the City, and conducted him in great state, with the Acclamations of the People (the City Companies in their Formalities lining the Streets on each side) to *Guildhall*, where he was Royally feasted, and after Dinner conducted with the same Pomp to *Whitehall*.

What man that had seen a Prince thus receiv'd into his *Capital City*, could have imagin'd, that within less than seven Weeks he should be oblig'd to leave it upon the account of *Tumults*, never to



see it again, but as a Prisoner brought thither to die upon a Scaffold? Yet this was King *Charles's* hard Fortune: And its here I would willingly draw a Veil over the remaining part of his Reign, that ended in one of the most dismal Tragedies that ever was acted upon the *English* Stage. His Virtues and Morals deserv'd a better Fate, and he suffer'd for the Faults of others, rather than Errors of his own.

The House of Commons had begun some few days before his Return, to fall into new Heats about *Innovations in Religion; the Rebellion in Ireland; Plots said to be laid in Scotland; the disabling the Clergy to exercise Temporal Jurisdiction; and excluding the Bishops from Votes in Parliament*: All which matters, together with Reports that were buzz'd about of some Designs against the Parliament, led the House into that Remarkable *Petition and Remonstrance of the State of the Nation*; in which they rip'd up again all the Mismanagements in the Government since the King's coming to the Crown; and attributed all to *Evil Counsels and Counsellors, and a Malignant Party about the King*. This *Remonstrance* was roughly pen'd, both for Matter and Expression, and

The Petition and Remonstrance of the H. of Commons to King *Charles*.

and met with great Opposition in the House; the Debate lasting from Three a Clock in the Afternoon till Ten a Clock next Morning; and was presented to his Majesty the Eighth Day after his Return from Scotland.

It was no wonder King Charles was surpriz'd at this *Petition and Remonstrance*, considering how much he had done to comply with his Parliament in all they desired. And since from these two *Papers*, and from the King's *Answer* to them at their delivery, and from the *Declaration* he publish'd more at large afterwards to the same purpose, the Reader will be better enabled to make a Judgment of the Causes and Arguments on both sides for the Civil War that ensued, I have plac'd all the Four in the *Appendix*: The Length of them may be more easily pardon'd, since upon the Matters contain'd in them, the whole almost of all the Differences that came to be decided by the Sword, happen'd to turn.

Things were now going fast on towards lessening the *Confidence* betwixt the King and Parliament: And yet there were not wanting Endeavours on both Sides to accommodate Matters by soft and healing Methods, when the King's

*Appendix*,  
Numb. 9.  
pag 279.

R. Charles's  
coming to  
the H. of  
Commons  
to demand  
the Five  
Members.

coming to the House of Commons in Person to demand *Five of their Members*, whom he had order'd the day before to be impeach'd of High-Treason, did put all into a *Combustion*, and gave occasion to the House to assert their Privileges with a greater Warmth than ever. This was the most unlucky step King *Charles* could have made at that Juncture: And the Indiscretion of some that attended the King to the *Lobby* of the House, was insisted upon as an Argument that the King was resolv'd to use violence upon the *Parliament*, which it's to be presum'd was a thing far from his Thoughts. The *Five Members* had hardly time to make their Escape just when the King was entring; and upon his going away, the House adjourn'd in a Flame for some days, ordering a Committee to sit in *Guildhall* in the mean time, as if they were not safe at *Westminster*.

Whoever they were that advis'd the King to this rash Attempt, are justly chargeable with all the Blood that was afterwards spilt; for this sudden Action was the first and visible Ground of all our following Miseries. It was believ'd, That if the King had found the *Five Members* in the House, and had call'd in

his Guards to seize them, the House would have endeavour'd their defence, and oppos'd *Force to Force*; which might have endanger'd the King's Person. But the Consequences were bad enough without this; for immediately upon it there was nothing but Confusion and Tumults, *Fears and Jealousies* every where, which spread themselves to *Whitehall* in the rudest manner; so that his Majesty thinking himself not safe there, he retir'd with his Family to *Hampton-Court*.

The King leaving the Parliament in this manner, there were scarce any hopes of a *thorough Reconciliation*. But when after a great many Removes from place to place, his Majesty came to set up his *Standard at Nottingham*, there ensued a *Fatal and Bloody War*; which it's reasonable to believe was never design'd at first by either Side.

The Beginning of the Civil Wars.

Each Party blam'd the other for beginning this War; and it's not easy to determine which of them began it. Though the King made the first Steps that seem'd to tend that way; such as *raising a Troop for a Guard to his Person; summoning the Gentlemen and Freeholders of several Counties to attend him in his Pro-*



gress to the North, and ordering Arms and Ammunition to be bought in Holland for his use: Yet the Parliament did as much at the same time; for they likewise rais'd Guards of their own, and took care that the Magazine of Hull should not fall into the Kings's hands. So that the King and Parliament prepar'd themselves insensibly for War, without considering that these Preparations must gradually and inevitably come to Blows in the end. The King's setting up his Standard at Nottingham was not the first publick Notice of this War, as has been commonly reported by Historians that should have known better; for that was not done till August 22. 1642. and yet the House of Commons pass'd these Two Votes the 12th of July before; 1. That an Army should be forthwith rais'd for the safety of the King's Person, Defence of both Houses of Parliament, and of those who have obey'd their Orders and Commands; and preserving of the true Religion, Laws, Liberty, and Peace of the Kingdom. And 2. That the Earl of Essex should be General, and the Earl of Bedford General of the Horse. To which Votes the House of Lords agreed.

Who

Whoever begun the War, it was carried on in the beginning with equal Success, and it was hard to determine which Side had the better: Till in the Sequel, the loss of *Essex's* Army in the *West*, and other disadvantages, brought the Parliaments Affairs to a low Ebb, and seem'd to Promise the King an entire Mastery. To retrieve their sinking Fortune, the Parliament was oblig'd to call in the *Scots* to their assistance; which so far turn'd the Scale, that the King lost ground every day after: And the defeat of his Army at the Battels of *Marston-Moor*, and *Naseby*, put him out of capacity to keep the Field, and broke entirely all his Measures.

During the whole course of this *Unnatural War*, it was hard to divine what would be the Fate of *England*; whether an *Absolute Unlimited Monarchy*; a new hudled-up *Commonwealth*; or a downright *Anarchy*. If the King should prevail, the first was to be fear'd, considering that the many Indignities put upon him, might embitter him against the Parliament: If the Parliament should prevail, the second was to be apprehended: And if the Army should set up for themselves, as afterwards they did, the last

was inevitably to follow. All which some of the best Men about the King wisely foresaw, and trembled at the Event of every Battel that was fought; whoever happen'd to be Victors. It was the dread of these Misfortunes that hinder'd the *Lords* and *Commons* whom the King call'd to *Oxford*, to assume to themselves the Name of *The Parliament of England*, and from declaring those met at *Westminster*, *Rebels*; though the King again and again importuned them to it, and took their Refusal so ill, that in one of his *Letters* to the *Queen*, intercepted at *Naseby*, he reflects heavily upon them for it, and calls them in derision *his Mungrel Parliament*. It was likewise the dismal Prospect he had of this War, even in the beginning of it, that mov'd that Accomplish'd Gentleman the *Lord Falkland* to throw away his Life, rather than be a witness of the Miseries were coming upon the Nation. For though he was *Secretary of State* to the King, and follow'd his Fortune; yet seeing all his Endeavours for promoting a Peace were in vain, he went on with a Party to skirmish with the Enemy, the day before the first Battel of *Newbury*; and being dissuaded by his Friends, as having no Call to it,

it, being no Military Person, he said, *He was weary of the Times, and foresaw much Misery to his Countrey, and hop'd he should be out of it e're night.* So pushing into the Battel, he was slain.

Many Endeavours were us'd from time to time to bring Matters to an Accommodation by way of *Treaty*; but still some one unlucky Accident or other render'd them all abortive. At the *Treaty of Uxbridge*, though the Parliament's *Demands* were high, and the King shew'd a more than ordinary Aversion to comply with them; yet the ill posture of the King's Affairs at that time, and the fatal Consequences they fear'd would follow upon breaking off of the *Treaty*, oblig'd a great many of the King's Friends, and more particularly that Noble Person the Earl of *Southampton*, who had gone Post from *Uxbridge* to *Oxford* for that purpose, to press the King again and again upon their Knees, to yield to the necessity of the times; and by giving his *Assent* to some of the most material *Propositions* that were sent him, to settle a lasting Peace with his People. The King was at last prevail'd with to follow their Counsel; and the next Morning was appointed for signing a *Warrant* to his Commissioners

Endea-  
vours that  
were us'd  
for an Ac-  
commo-  
dation.



tioners to that effect. And so sure were they of a happy end of all differences, that the King at Supper complaining his Wine was not good, one told him merrily, *He hop'd that his Majesty would drink better before a Week was over, at Guildhall with the Lord Mayor.* But so it was, that when they came early next morning to wait upon him with the *Warrant* that had been agreed upon over Night, they found his Majesty had chang'd his resolution, and was become inflexible in these Points.

Montros's  
Fatal Letter.

The unhappy Occasion of this Alteration has lain hitherto a *Secret* in History, and might have continued such still, if a Letter from the *Marquis of Montros* in *Scotland*, whereof I have seen a Copy under the Duke of *Richmond's* Hand, did not give a sufficient Light into it. To make the Matter better understood, it's necessary to say something of *Montros* and his Actions in *Scotland*.

This Nobleman had been at first very active and zealous for the Liberties of his Countrey; and was the first man that pass'd the River *Tweed* at the Head of Five hundred Horse, upon the *Scot's First Expedition* into *England*. But being afterwards disoblig'd, or, as some say, repenting of his

his former Error, he left that Side, and came in to the King at the breaking out of the War between him and the Parliament. When the *Scots* came into *England* the second time to assist the Parliament, *Montross* apply'd himself to the King for a *Commission* to levy War against his Rebel Subjects, as they were call'd, of *Scotland*; assuring his Majesty, he was able with the Assistance of his Friends, and Concurrence of the rest of the Royal Party, to make at least a very considerable Diversion, if not to reduce the whole Countrey to his Majesty's Obedience. Accordingly the *Marquess* was made *Governour of Scotland*; where in the space of five Months, with a handful of raw undisciplin'd Men, and those not half arm'd, he did over-run a great part of the Countrey, and gain three very considerable *Battels*; the last of which was that of *Inverlochy*, fought the second of *February*, 1644. according to the *English*, and 1645. according to the *Scotch* Account. In this *Battel* the Earl of *Argyle* was entirely defeated, and the Prime of the Noble Family of the *Campbells* cut off, with inconsiderable Loss on *Montross's* side; who next day dispatch'd an Express to the King with the News of this and his

two

two former *Victories*: And in his Letter express'd his *utter Aversion to all Treaties with his Rebel Parliament in England*, as he calls them: Tells the King, *he is heartily sorry to hear that his Majesty had consented to Treat*; and hopes it is not true: Advises him *not to enter into Terms with his Rebellious Subjects, as being a thing unworthy of a King*: And assures him, That he himself was now so much Master of Scotland, *that he doubted not but to be able within a few Months to march into England to his Majesty's assistance, with a brave Army*. And concludes with this odd Expression, *When I have conquer'd from Dan to Beersheba, as I doubt not I shall very quickly, I hope I may have then leave to say as David's General said to his Master, Come thou, lest this Countrey be call'd by my Name*.

This Letter writ with such an Air of Assurance, and by a Person that was thought capable to make good his Promises; and the Matter contain'd in it, suiting but too well with the King's Inclinations, was unluckily deliver'd to the King but a few Hours before he was to have sign'd the *Warrant* before-mention'd; and had as ill effects as the worst of King Charles's Enemies could have wish'd; for  
it

it dash'd out in a moment all the Impressions his best Friends had been making upon him for a considerable time, towards a full *Settlement* with his People.

It look'd as if there was some *secret Fatality* in this whole matter ; for it could hardly have been imagin'd, that a Letter writ the Third of *February*, in the furthermost *North* Corner of *Britain*, should come so soon to *Oxford*, considering the length of the Journey, the badness of the Roads at that time of the Year, especially through the Mountainous parts of *Scotland*, together with the Parliament's and *Scotch* Armies and Garrisons that were posted all along the Road : And yet certain it is, it came through all these Dangers and Inconveniencies in very few days ; for it's indors'd upon the Copy I have seen, *That it was deliver'd to the King during the Treaty of Uxbridge* ; which every body knows began the 30th of *January*, and ended the 22d of *February* : And further, it must have been deliver'd before the 19th of *February*, because King *Charles* takes notice of it in a Letter to the Queen, of that Date, found among others at *Naseby* ; where he says, *Though I leave News to others,*



*others, yet I cannot but tell thee, That even now I have received certain Intelligence of a great Defeat given by Montross to Argyll, who upon surprize totally routed those Rebels, and kill'd Fifteen hundred upon the place. And it's remarkable, That in the same Letter to the Queen, immediately after the mentioning Montross's Victory, the King adds, That as for trusting the Rebels, either by going to London, or disbanding my Army before a Peace, do no ways fear my hazarding so cheaply or foolishly; for I esteem the Interest thou hast in me at a far dearer rate; and pretend to have a little more Wit (at least, by the Sympathy that's betwixt us) than to put my self into the Reverence of Perfidious Rebels. Which Words being compared with Montross's Letter, it will be found the one is a Commentary upon the other.*

*Appendix,  
Numb. 10.  
P. 353*

*I have plac'd Montross's Letter it self in the Appendix; and cannot leave it, without making this Observation, That considering the time it was writ, the Critical Minute it was deliver'd, with the sad Consequences that attended it; it makes this Axiom true, That oftentimes the Fate of Princes and States is chiefly owing to very minute and unforeseen Accidents.*

The

The *Treaty of Uxbridge* being thus broke off, the War was renew'd with greater Fury than ever; till at last the Parliament's Army having beaten the King out of the Field, came to kick their *Masters* out of the *House*; and having modell'd the Parliament and Army to their own minds, did set up for themselves, and at one Blow compleated the Ruin of their Countrey in the Murther of King Charles I. and the Extirpation of Monarchy. In short, a continued Series of Misfortunes attended the Royal Cause; and several favourable Accidents that seem'd from time to time to promise better Events, did concur in the end to the King's undoing: till at last, that Unhappy Prince, in being brought before a Tribunal of his own Subjects, and submitting his Neck to the Stroke of a Common Executioner, taught the World an astonishing Example of the *Instability of Human Greatness*; and in that and the rest of his Sufferings, a *lasting Pattern of Christian Magnanimity and Patience*.

The Character of King Charles I. may be taken in a great part from what has been already said; and I shall only add a few things more. He was a Prince  
of

The Character of  
King  
Charles I.

of a *Comely presence*, of a *Sweet Grave* but *Melancholly Aspect*. His Face was Regular, Handsome, and well complexion'd; his Body Strong, Healthy, and well-made; and though of a low Stature, was capable to endure the greatest Fatigues. His Face, contrary to that of his Son's *Charles H.* was easily taken, either in *Painting* or *Sculpture*; and scarce any one, though never so indifferently skill'd in their Art, fail'd to hit it. He had something in the Lines and Features which Physiognomists account unfortunate; And it's commonly reported, that his Picture being sent to *Rome* to have a *Busto* done by it; a famous Statuary not knowing whose it was, told the Gentleman that brought it, *He was sorry if it was the Face of any Relation of his; for it was one of the most Unfortunate he ever saw; and according to all the Rules of Art, the Person whose it was must dye a violent Death.* In his Temper he was *Brave, Magnificent, Liberal* and *Constant*; but more affable to Strangers than his own Subjects. It was his Noble and Generous Behaviour that took so much with the King of *Spain*, when he went thither to court the *Infanta*, that he rejected the repeated Solicitations of his Council

*Council* to seize him; and paid him more *Respect* than could have been well expected if he had been King of *England* at that time. Of his *Composure* of Mind in time of greatest danger, he gave a Noble Instance in his Behaviour in that great *Storm* in the Road of *St. Andrees*, which was worthy the Ancient Philosophers: Nor did he fall short of the Bravest in *Personal Courage*; having expos'd his Person in every *Battel* he was in, and oftentimes charging at the Head of his *Squadrons*.

He had a good Taste of Learning, and a more than ordinary Skill in the *Liberal Arts*, especially *Painting*, *Sculpture*, *Architecture*, and *Medals*; and being a Generous Benefactor to the most Celebrated *Masters* in those Arts, he acquir'd the Noblest *Collection* of any Prince in his time, and more than all the Kings of *England* had done before him. It's said, notwithstanding his natural Generosity, That he bestow'd Favours with a worse Grace than his Son King *Charles* the Second denied them; and many times obliterated the sense of the Obligation by the manner of it: But indeed he had seldom much to give, being kept short of Money a great part of his Reign. The

G

Essentials



Dr. Juxon,  
Bishop of  
London.

Essentials of *Divinity* he was as much Master of as ever his Father had been, but without the Allay of *Pedantry*: Of this, among other things, the Papers that pass betwixt him and Mr. *Henderson* at *Newcastle*, will be a lasting Monument. He was a great *Patron* of the *Clergy*; but his employing them in the highest Offices of Trust in *State-Matters*, created Envy against them, and lessen'd the Love of the Nobility towards him. Yet such was the Honesty and Integrity of one of them in the greatest and most obnoxious *Post* in the Kingdom, and when some Years after he had resign'd the Treasurer's Staff, and when the Parliament wanted not will to crush him, *they could not find upon the narrowest Scrutiny, any one thing to object either against his Accounts, or his Behaviour in that Place.*

King *Charles* was a passionate Lover of his *Queen*, who was a Beautiful Lady, and in all things very well accomplish'd; insomuch that his Friends regretted the Ascendant she had over him on some occasions, while others tax'd him with the Character of an Uxorious Husband. He was fond of his Children, and kind to his Servants; though these last felt sometimes the hasty Sallies of his Passion. He was  
not

not mistaken of himself, when he said before the High-Court of Justice, *That he understood as much Law as any private Gentleman in England*: and pity it was that any of his Ministers should have advis'd him to make Breaches in what he so well understood.

He spoke several Languages very well, and with a singular good Grace; though now and then, when he was warm in Discourse, he was inclinable to *stammer*. He writ a tolerable Hand for a King, but his Sense was strong, and his Style *Laconical*; and yet he seldom wrote in any Language but *English*. Some of his *Manifestoes*, *Declarations*, and other Publick Papers, he drew himself, and most of them he Corrected. In comparing those of the King's with the Parliament's, one would be easily inclin'd to prefer, for the most part, the King's, for the Strength of Reasoning, and the Force of Expression. I have seen several Pieces of his own Hand, and therefore may the better affirm, That both for Matter and Form, they surpass those of his Ablest Ministers, and come nothing short of *Strafford* or *Falkland*, the Two most Celebrated Pens of that time.

As to his Religion, he was Protestant, and in the strictest sense, of the Church of *England*, and for the Divine Right of Episcopacy. But his consenting personally to the total Abolition of that Order in *Scotland*, does not well agree with this part of his Character; especially considering his repeated Protestations at the Treaties of *Uxbridge* and *Newport*, That he could not supersede it, but for a time in *England*. What his Opinion was, about *Subjects defending their Religion and Liberties by Force of Arms*, appear'd in the business of *Rochell*. For though some would have had us believe of late, That *Defensive Arms* were inconsistent with the Principles of the Church of *England*; it's hop'd they will not deny but King *Charles I.* understood the *Doctrine* and *Principles* of that Church as well as any other Person can pretend to do; and yet it's certain, that in his Practice and Declarations he allow'd of the People of *Rochell's vindicating their Religion and Liberties from the Encroachments made by their Sovereign*, and that by *Force of Arms*; and assisted them in so doing.

His assist-  
ing the  
*Rochellers*.

King *Charles* did not only assist the *Rochellers* after the War was actually begun, but we have reason to believe that he

he encourag'd them to it at first, if we look into the Duke of Rhoan's *Memoirs* and *Apology*; where that Great Man acquaints the World in what manner he was brought into that War, in these words, as near as I can translate them from the Original: *When all our Privileges (says he) were violated, and our Religion brought to Ruin, and the City of Rochell in the greatest Danger, I could see no possibility to escape, but was upon the sad thoughts of submitting our selves to the Mercy of the King (meaning Lewis the XIIIth.) Being in this desperate state, there came a Gentleman to me from the King of England; who told me from his Master, That he seeing our Privileges were violated, and our Religion in danger of being subverted, had taken Compassion on our Sufferings, and thought himself oblig'd in Honour and Conscience to assist and protect us; which he was resolv'd to do, by employing all his Kingdoms, and his own Person, in so just a War; Provided we would join our Arms with his, and not enter into any Treaty with the King (meaning the French King) without him; and for that effect he would make War against the French King both by Sea and Land. Intreating me (continues the Duke of Rhoan) not*



to abandon my Party in so just and honourable a War. And a little after in the same Apology, he has these words ; *I refer it to all the World, if I can be justly call'd the Author of the Third War, considering I was solicited to it by the King of Great Britain.*

But suppose there were no Credit to be given to the *Duke of Rhoan*, whose Honour and Veracity even his very Enemies never call'd in question ; and suppose it were false, which all the World knows to be true, that King *Charles* did actually assist the *Rochellers* again and again against their *Prince* ; yet we have Authentick Accounts of several Speeches made by the *Duke of Buckingham's Secretary* to the *Rochellers*, and of several Messages sent to them from the *Duke*, in name of the King his Master, all to the same purpose : And likewise a *Manifesto* publish'd by him, and sign'd with his own Hand, dated *July 21. 1627.* aboard the *Admiral Ship* ; in which he has this Expression : *No private Interest (says he) has oblig'd my Master to make War against the French King, but merely the Defence of the Protestant Church : My Master's design is the Re-establishment of the Church ; their Good is his Interest, and their Contentment his End.*

We

*Histoire de  
La Siege de  
Rochell par  
Mr. Mer-  
wault.*

We have also Authentick Copies of the League betwixt King *Charles* and the People of *Rochell*; in which there is this Expression, *That the Rochellers may be deliver'd from the Oppressions they groan under.* And to sum up all, there were two Letters writ by King *Charles* with his own Hand to the *Rochellers*, which are mention'd by Monsieur *Mervault*, a *Syndic* of that Town, and who was active in the whole matter, and present during the whole Siege, of which the Copies follow.

*To the Mayor, Sheriffs, Peers, and Burgessees  
of the City of Rochell.*

Gentlemen,

**B**E not discouraged, though my Fleet be return'd. Hold out to the last; for I am resolv'd that my whole Fleet shall perish, rather than you be not reliev'd. For this effect I have order'd it to return back to your Coasts, and am sending several Ships to reinforce it. With the help of God the Success shall be happy for you.

At Westminster, May  
19. O. S. 1628.

Your Good Friend,

CHARLES R.

G 4

The

The other Letter, directed as before, runs thus:

Gentlemen,

**I** Have been very much troubled to hear that my Fleet was upon the point of returning home, without obeying my Orders in supplying you with Provisions, cost what it will. I have commanded them to return to your Road, and not to come away until you are suppl'd, or at least till they are re-inforc'd, which I have order'd to be done with all diligence. Assure your selves, That I shall never abandon you; and that I shall employ the whole Power of my Kingdom for your deliverance, until God assist me to obtain for you an assured Peace.

Given at our Palace of  
Westminster, May 27.  
O.S. 1628.

Your Good Friend,

CHARLES R.

I have dwelt the longer upon this Subject, because it is easy to draw a Parallel betwixt the Case of King Charles's assisting Subjects against their King in the Defence of their Religion and Liberties, and that of another Prince's doing the same upon a late occasion. But as the former had no other Right to interpose  
in

in the one, but *the Common Interest of Religion*; so the other had over and above that, *the Right of a Prince of the Blood, and the Interest of the Presumptive Heir of the Crown*; all which alter'd the Case greatly to the advantage of the latter. King *Charles* was as unfortunate in this War with *France*, as he was in all others he engag'd in. The poor City of *Rochell*, after a long and cruel Siege, amidst the Horrors of Famine and Death, was at last forc'd to submit to the Will of the Conqueror; and the loss of that Bulwark of the *French Liberty*, was in some time follow'd by the total Ruin of the Protestant Interest in *France*. The *English Fleet* lay within view of the Town when it was taken; and which added to the Misfortune, that mighty *Dyke*, that had been rais'd at inestimable Charges to block up the Harbour, fell down the very next day after the Surrender, and open'd a Passage for the Fleet that came to relieve it, when it was now too late.

During this War, he lost his Favourite, *George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham*. This Gentleman was one of the greatest Prodigies of Fortune that any Age has produc'd; and gave us a signal Instance how

The Character of the D. of Buckingham.



Vid. Hack-  
er's Life of  
B<sup>p</sup> Willi-  
ams.

how far it is possible for the same Person to be the *Favourite* of two Successive Monarchs. He possess'd King *James's* Favour without a Rival, and without any other Interruption, but that *Cloud* which the Intrigues of *Spain* rais'd against him in the King's mind, which has been already hinted at; wherein the Son shar'd equally with the Favourite, and which Bishop *Williams's* dexterity soon dissipated. King *Charles* out-did his Father in his Kindness to *Buckingham*, and had no *Favourite* after him. He had all the Qualities that are requisite for a Court, and fit to acquire and preserve his Master's Affection. Notwithstanding he was in his Temper *highly Generous* and *Beneficent*, and that there were few Great Families in *England* but he had some way or other oblig'd, either in themselves or their Relations, yet he fell under the Misfortune that attends *Favorites*; but it must be own'd he was rather *envied* than *hated*. He had the ill luck to be charg'd with a great many things of which he was innocent, and particularly in relation to the *Spanish Match*. By all that I have seen, he deserv'd the Thanks of the Nation upon that account, rather than an *Impeachment* in Parli-  
ment:

ment: For it was he chiefly that broke off that *Match*, when he saw how much King *James* suffer'd in his Honour, through the manner he was treated in it, which he found out sooner than the King did himself. It's none of the least Proofs of the Duke *Buckingham's* Innocency in these matters, that *Spanhemius* in his History of the *Electrice Palatine*, (writ long after *Buckingham's* Death) speaks always honourably of him in the Business of the *Palatinate*; whereas at the same time he exposes King *James's* Conduct.

It's a vulgar mistake, that he came to be the *First Minister*, merely through the Caprice of King *James*; for the Court unanimously promoted his Interest, and recommended him to the highest Favour, in opposition to *Somerset*, whose Arrogancy, Covetousness, and Pride, had disoblig'd every body, and made both the King and the Court weary of him. No Servant did his Master more Honour in the *Magnificence of his Train*, and the *splendid Manner of his living*; especially in his *Embassy to France*; where in the Gracefulness of his Person, and Nobleness of his Behaviour and Equipage, he outdid any thing that ever was seen

seen of that kind before. He was more form'd for a Court than a Camp; and though very Brave in his Person, he was Unsuccessful in the only *Military Expedition* he was engag'd in, which was that of *Rochell*: And when he was upon the embarking a second time to repair that Disgrace, *he was basely murther'd amidst a Crowd of his Friends, and in the height of his Glory.*

To return to King *Charles's* Character. If he had any Personal Faults, they were much over-weigh'd by his *Virtues*: But an *Immoderate Desire of Power*, beyond what the Constitution did allow of, was the Rock he split upon. He might have been happy, if he had trusted more to his own Judgment, than that of those about him; for as in his nature he was an Enemy to all violent Measures, so was he apt to submit his own Reason to that of others, when any such things came under consideration. There was another Error that run through the whole Management of his Affairs, both Domestick and Publick, and which occasion'd a great part of his Misfortunes: He appear'd many times stiff and positive in denying at first, what he granted afterwards out of time, and too late to give  
satisf-

satisfaction; which encourag'd ambitious and interested Persons to ask more than they thought of at first, and lost him the fruits of his former Concessions.<sup>t</sup> So that in the whole Conduct of his Life he verified this Maxim, *That Errors in Government have ruin'd more Princes than their Personal Vices.*

I shall have done with this Melancholy Subject, after the Reader has been acquainted with one remarkable *Accident*, not hitherto mention'd with that Exactness it deserves, by any Author I know of; which considering its Consequences, is an extraordinary Instance, *upon what small Hinges the greatest Revolutions may turn.*

That the principal Rise of all King Charles's latter Troubles, was from the *Second War with the Scots*, has been already shew'd. But what the Motives were that embolden'd the *Scots* to alter their Measures from those they had observ'd in the first War, continues in great part a Mystery to this day. In the first War, they stood upon the Defensive only, and came no further than their own Borders; but in the second they acted so much on the offensive, that they march'd into *England* as far as *Durham*, and were coming on

The true Cause of the *Scots* coming first into *England*.



on further, if the *Treaty* that was set afoot at *Rippon* had not stop't them. All the Accounts we have of this proceeding of the *Scots*, do seem to be ground'd upon the Informations they had of the *Backwardness* of England to assist the King in this War; and that they were well assur'd of Friends all over the Kingdom, and some of nearest access to the King's Person, who they knew would interpose in their behalf, rather than Matters should come to Extremities. But these general Encouragements can hardly be thought to have had such weight with the *Scots*, as to make them venture upon so bold an Attempt; and therefore it's but reasonable to believe they went upon surer Grounds, when they made this *Invasion*.

This matter will be set in a clearer Light, when the Reader is acquainted, That a *Forg'd Letter* (pretended to be sent from some of the most Leading Men of the Nobility of *England*), came to have the same effects as if it had been a True One, and really sign'd by the same Persons whose Names were affix'd to it. Which fell out in this manner.

After the *Pacification at Duns*, which put an end to the first War, the King at  
his

his Return to *London* was prevail'd with, upon the account of several things the *Scots* were said to have done contrary to the *Articles* of the *Treaty*, and the Duty of Subjects, to order the *Pacification* to be burnt by the hands of the Common Hangman. To reduce them to obedience, he was meditating a New War, and in order thereto was levying another Army, and was pleas'd to call a Parliament to assist him in it. The *Scots* had their Commissioners at *London* at that time, who wanted not Friends in both Houses to inform them of every thing that happen'd in *Parliament* and *Council*, which they fail'd not to write home to their Countrey; advising them to be on their Guard, and to put themselves in a posture not to be surpriz'd.

The *Scots* knowing how matters went in *England*, and that a new Storm was like to break out upon them, were resolv'd to put themselves into a Posture of Defence; and to the Forces they had not yet disbanded, they added considerable new Levies both of Horse and Foot. Their Preparations went faster on than the King's, and with the more cheerfulness; for by this time he had parted on ill terms with his Parliament, and with-

without obtaining a *Supply*. While the King was advancing towards the *North*, the *Scots* drew to their Borders ; and it was debated at several *Councils of War*, where a *Committee of Estates* assisted, Whether they should expect the King upon the Borders, as they had done before, or march into *England*, and carry the War out of their own Countrey. But they had taken no Resolution in the matter, before the King was got as far as *Tork*.

In this nice Juncture there came a Gentleman to the *English* Border, who sent a Message to the *Earl of Rothes*, That he desir'd to acquaint him with a Matter of the greatest Importance and Secrecy, if he might privately and with safety speak with him alone. *Rothes* thereupon sent a Trusty Servant with a *Passport*, to conduct him to his *Quarters* ; where the Gentleman told him, That he was directed particularly to him, as a Person of great Honour, and whom they could safely trust, with a Message from several Great Men of *England* ; who were griev'd for the Ruin they foresaw must necessarily attend their Countrey, if the King should make himself Absolute Master of Scotland ; seeing after that, they  
were

were to expect the same Fate, considering how little to the King's satisfaction things had been carried in the Parliament of England, and how much he had resented their refusing a Subsidy to carry on this War. He told him, That nothing was so much desir'd in England, as a Free Parliament to redress their Grievances: And if the Scots would march immediately into England, the King must necessarily be straitned to that degree in his Affairs, as to be oblig'd to call a Parliament: And that upon their March, the City of London, and the greatest part of the Nobility and Gentry would not only petition the King for a Free Parliament, but likewise mediate between the King and them, and bring matters to such an accommodation, as might be for the good of both Nations: Adding withal, That if the Scots slipt this Opportunity, they were never to expect the like again. The Gentleman having deliver'd this Message, gave the Earl a Letter directed to him, and sign'd by about Twelve Noblemen, much to the same purpose, but writ more cautiously, and in more general terms; desiring him for a further Explanation, to give entire Credit to the Bearer, whom they had fully inform'd of their Intentions.

H

Rothes,



*Rothés*, with the Gentleman's leave, acquainted *General Lesley*, afterwards Earl of *Leven*, and one or two of the most leading Men of the Committee of Estates, with this *Message*; and upon solemn Promises of Secrecy, shew'd them the *Letter*; both which agreeing so well in the main with the Intelligence they had receiv'd from *England*, and suiting with their own Inclinations, determin'd them in the Point: And next Morning, in the Council of War, *It was resolv'd to march into England that Afternoon*; which accordingly they did. *Rothés* in the mean time dispatch'd back the Messenger with an Answer to the Noblemen he suppos'd had writ to him; *Thanking them for their Advice, and acquainting them with the Resolution had been taken thereupon.*

It fell out afterwards at the Treaty of *Rippon*, when the *English* and *Scotch* Commissioners grew familiar with one another, that the Earl of *Rothés* came from *Newcastle* to the Place of Treaty; and one of the *English* Noblemen making him a Visit, they fell into discourse about the present Juncture of Affairs. The *English* Nobleman express'd how much he had been surpriz'd upon the first News of

of the *Scots* entring into *England*; and told him, That though he hop'd it would now turn to the advantage of both Nations, yet it was in it self a dangerous and rash Attempt, and might have been fatal to the *Scots*, if the King had not been pleas'd to enter into a Treaty for an Accommodation of Matters in dispute between them. *Rothes* was at a stand what to make of this Discourse, considering this Nobleman was one of those whose Name was to the *Letter* formerly mention'd; and therefore answer'd, *That he wonder'd his Lordship was surpriz'd at an Action he had so much influenc'd: And that if it had not been for the invitation of himself and his Friends, perhaps the Scots Army might have continued still on the other side of Tweed.* The Two Lords being equally in the dark as to one another's meaning, were at length, upon producing of the *Letter*, both of them deceiv'd, and found it was a mere Forgery; which was afterwards acknowledg'd by the Contriver, who was the Lord *Savile*, created some time after Earl of *Suffex*.

This *Letter*, though forgotten now, was much talk'd of during the Civil Wars: And I have seen several Original Papers of those Times, that

The Lord  
Wharton.

mention'd it. A Noble Lord, lately dead, whose Name was to the *Letter*, never made any scruple of telling this Passage to his Friends, in the manner I have related it. And I once had a Copy of the *Letter* it self (from the *Original*, which was then, and I believe is still among the Papers of the *Noble Family of Rothés*), which I have since lost. I must confess I have dwelt longer upon this matter, than consists with the Brevity I intended, and that it might have been more properly mention'd in another place: Yet thus it was, that a *Counterfeit Invitation* brought the *Scots* into *England*, in the Year 1640. And considering the Consequences, it may be said, *That Providence many times seems to play with Human Affairs, and influences the Fate of Kingdoms by Counsels and Measures the most improbable to succeed, if he had not design'd them to be subservient to his great Ends.*

Bishop of  
Salisbury's  
Memoirs  
of the  
Dukes of  
Hamilton.

There is an Historian for whom I have the highest Veneration, who in his *Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton*, mentions a Passage not unlike to this, and perhaps it may be the very same, though his Relation and mine differ *in the time*, and some other *Circumstances*. And seeing I happen'd

happen'd to look into that Book some time after I had writ these Sheets; that I may do Justice to its Reverend Author, whose Information I am willing to believe may be better than my own, though I had mine from no common hands, I shall give an Account of it in his own words; and therather, for that I do not remember the Date of the *Letter* upon which the Passage turns, though I do the main Design and Contents of it.

“But that the Reader may not be  
“wholly in the dark, *says this Great Hi-*  
“*storian*, about the Grounds of this Con-  
“fidence the *Covenanters* had, I shall set  
“down what I had from some Persons  
“of Great Honour, who were fully in-  
“form'd about it. When the Earls of  
“*Dumferm'ing* and *Loudon* came to *Lon-*  
“*don*, a Person of Quality of the *Englisch*  
“Nation (whose Name is suppress'd  
“because of the Infamy of this Action)  
“came to them, and with great Vehe-  
“mence press'd them to engage in a new  
“War; and among other Motives  
“brought them *Engagements* in Writing  
“from most of the greatest Peers of  
“*England*, to join with them, and assist  
“them when they should come into Eng-  
H 3 “land



“ *land* with their Army. This did much  
 “ animate them ; for they had not the  
 “ least doubt of the Papers brought them.  
 “ But all this was discover’d at the *Treaty*  
 “ of *Rippon*, to have been a base *Forgery* :  
 “ For there the *Scottish* Lords looking  
 “ very sullenly upon some of the *English*  
 “ Lords, as on Persons of no Faith or  
 “ Truth, the Lord *Mandevil* came to the  
 “ Earl of *Rothes*, and ask’d the reason of  
 “ that change of their Countenances and  
 “ Behaviour in them ; who after some  
 “ high Reflections, at length challeng’d  
 “ him and the other Lords of not keep-  
 “ ing what they engag’d to them. Up-  
 “ on which that Lord stood amaz’d, and  
 “ told him, and so did the other Lords  
 “ there, That they had sent no such  
 “ Messages nor Papers to them ; and  
 “ that they had been abus’d by the black-  
 “ est Imposture that ever was. Thus it  
 “ appear’d (*concludes this Author*) how  
 “ dangerous it may be to receive some  
 “ things that seem to have the highest  
 “ probabilities in them, easily and upon  
 “ trust.

To leave this Subject, it may not be  
 improper to add another Passage out of  
 the same Book ; where that *Reverend*  
*Prelate* speaking of the Inducements  
 that

that prevail'd with the *Scots* to come in to the Assistance of the Parliament Three Years after; tells us, "That among other Arguments, That Paper which was sent down in the Year 1640. as the Engagement of Twenty Eight of the Peers of *England*, for their Concurrence with the *Scottish* Army that Year, was shown to divers, to engage them into a grateful Return to those to whom it was pretended they were so highly oblig'd. For though the Earl of *Rothes* (and a few more) were well satisfied about the Forgery of that Paper, yet they thought That a Secret of too great Importance to be generally known; therefore it was still kept up from the Body of the Nation.

To shut up what relates to *K. Charles I.* After the Treaty of *Newport* was broke off, and he once more carried away by the Army, he found his Case was desperate, and thereupon began to have some Thoughts of *Resigning the Crown to the Prince of Wales*, as the only means in that unhappy Condition, to preserve it for his Family. But before he had time to digest this Resolution, or an opportunity to acquaint the Parliament with it,

*K. Charles's* thoughts of Resigning the Crown to his Son.

he was hurried on to his Tryal. The last day of that Tryal he earnestly propos'd, *That before Sentence pass'd, he might be heard before the Lords and Commons in the Painted Chamber, where he had something to offer for the Peace of the Kingdom, and the Liberty of the Subject, which might settle all differences.* It is probable he meant by this, to have resign'd the Crown; which his Enemies having some Intimation of, and fearing it might be accepted, they were the more forward to proceed to *Sentence and Execution.*

About setting up the Duke of Gloucester King.

Likewise some days before his Death, the prevailing Party had thoughts of setting up the *Duke of Gloucester King.* This was not kept so secret, but King Charles had some notice of it; for the Duke and his Sister having leave to wait upon him the Night before the Execution, he took the Young Duke in his Arms, and told him, *They were going to take off his Father's Head, and may be they would set the Crown upon his Head; which he forbade him to accept of while his Two Elder Brothers were living.*

There befel him an *Accident*, which though a Trifle in it self, and that no Weight is to be laid upon any thing of that nature; yet since the best Authors, both

both *Ancient* and *Modern*, have not thought it below the Majesty of History to mention the like, it may be the more excusable to insert it.

The King being at *Oxford* during the Civil Wars, went one day to see the Publick Library, where he was shew'd among other Books, a *Virgil* nobly Printed, and exquisitely bound. The Lord *Falkland*, to divert the King, would have his Majesty make a Tryal of his Fortune by the *Sortes Virgilianæ*; which every body knows was an usual kind of *Augury* some Ages past. Whereupon the King opening the Book, the Period which happen'd to come up, was that part of *Dido's* Imprecation against *Æneas*; which Mr. *Dryden* translates thus:

His consulting  
the *Sortes*  
*Virgilianæ*.

Yet let a Race untam'd, and haughty Foes, *Æneid. IV.*  
His peaceful Entrance with dire Arms oppose. *l. 88.*  
Oppress'd with Numbers in th' unequal  
Field,

His Men discourag'd, and himself expell'd,  
Let him for Succour sue from place to place,  
Torn from his Subjects, and his Son's embrace.

First let him see his Friends in Battel slain,  
And their untimely Fate lament in vain:

And



*And when at length the cruel War shall cease,  
On hard Conditions may he buy his Peace.  
Nor let him then enjoy Supreme Command,  
But fall untimely by some hostile Hand,  
And lye unburied on the barren Sand.*

It is said K. Charles seem'd concern'd at this Accident; and that the Lord Falkland observing it, would likewise try his own Fortune in the same manner; hoping he might fall upon some Passage that could have no relation to his Case, and thereby divert the King's Thoughts from any Impression the other might have upon him: But the place that Falkland stumbled upon, was yet more suited to his Destiny than the other had been to the King's; being the following Expressions of *Evander*, upon the untimely Death of his Son *Pallas*, as they are translated by the same Hand.

*Aeneid. XI. O Pallas! thou hast fail'd thy plighted Word,  
l. 230. To fight with Caution, not to tempt the  
Sword:*

*I warn'd thee, but in vain; for well I knew,  
What Perils Youthful Ardour would pursue:  
That boiling Blood would carry thee too far;  
Young as thou wert in Dangers, raw to  
War!*

*O curst*

*O curst Essay of Arms, disast'rous Doom,  
Prelude of Bloody Fields, and Fights to  
come !*

To return to our History : Upon the Death of King *Charles I.* there was a *Total Eclipse* of the Royal Family for Twelve Years : During a great part of which time an unusual *Meteor* fill'd the *English Orb*, and with its surprizing Influence over-aw'd not only Three Kingdoms, but the powerfullest Princes and States about us. A Great Man he was, and Posterity might have paid a just Homage to his Memory, *if he had not embued his Hands in the Blood of his Prince, or had not usurp'd upon the Liberties of his Countrey.*

It being as natural a Curiosity in Mankind to know the Character of a *Fortunate Usurper*, as of a Lawful King. it may not perhaps be much amiss to say something of *Oliver Cromwell.*

By Birth he was a Gentleman, and bred up for some time at the *University*, though nothing of a Scholar. When the *Civil Wars* broke out, he took the Parliament's Side ; and his first Employment in the Army was a Captain of Horse, whence by degrees he rose to be *Lieutenant-*

The Usur-  
pation  
and Cha-  
cter of  
*Oliver  
Cromwell.*

*nant-General* under the *Earl of Manchester*: In which Post he was the chief Instrument, together with *Lieutenant-General Lesley*, of gaining the Battel of *Marston Moor*, which prov'd the first remarkable Stop to the King's Success. Some time after, the *Earl of Manchester* having refus'd to give an *Order* to *Cromwell*, to charge a Party of Horse where the King was personally present, he came up to *London* to complain against him, tho he ow'd his advancement chiefly to his Favour. Which the *Earl* having notice of, and being by this time weary of a War, of which he foresaw the fatal Consequences, he took that opportunity to lay down his Command; wherein he was succeeded by *Cromwell*.

*Sir Thomas Fairfax* also laying down his Commission some time after, he was declar'd *General of all the Forces rais'd or to be rais'd by the Parliament*; and having modell'd the Parliament and Army to his mind, he dismiss'd the former, when he had no more use for them; and upon their forc'd Resignation, he assum'd the *Supreme Power*, under the Title of *Protector*.

Being thus mounted to so high a Pinnacle of Fortune, he became more formidable

dable both at Home and Abroad, than most Princes that had ever sat upon the *English* Throne. And it was said that *Cardinal Mazarine* would change Countenance whenever he heard him nam'd; so that it pass'd into a Proverb in *France*, That *he was not so much afraid of the Devil, as of Oliver Cromwell*. He had a Manly Stern Look, and was of an Active Healthful Constitution, able to endure the greatest Toil and Fatigue. Though Brave in his Person, yet he was Wary in his Conduct; for from the time he was first declar'd *Protector*, he always wore a *Coat of Mail* under his Cloaths. His Conversation among his Friends was very diverting and familiar, but in publick reserv'd and grave. He was sparing in his Diet, though sometimes would drink freely, but never to Excess. He was moderate in all other Pleasures, and for what was visible, free from Immoralities, especially after he came to make a Figure in the World. He writ a tolerable good Hand, and a Stile becoming a Gentleman; except when he had a Mind to wheedle, under the Mask of Religion; which he knew nicely how to do, when his Affairs requir'd it. He affected for the most part a Plainness in his Cloaths; but in them,  
as



as well as in his *Guards* and *Attendance*, he appear'd with Magnificence upon Publick Occasions. No man was ever better serv'd, nor took more pains to be so. As he was severe to his Enemies, so was he beneficent and kind to his Friends. And if he came to hear of a Man fit for his purpose, though never so obscure, he sent for him, and employ'd him; *suiting the Employment to the Person, and not the Person to the Employment.* And upon this *Maxim* in his Government depended in a great measure his Success.

In matters of greatest Moment, he trusted none but his Secretary *Thurlo*, and oftentimes not him. An Instance of which *Thurlo* us'd to tell of himself; *That he was once commanded by Cromwell to go at a certain hour to Grays-Inn, and at such a place deliver a Bill of Twenty thousand Pound, payable to the Bearer at Genoua, to a Man he should find walking in such a Habit and Posture as he describ'd him, without speaking one word.* Which accordingly *Thurlo* did; and never knew to his dying day either the *Person* or the *Occasion*.

At another time the *Protector* coming late at Night to *Thurlo's Office*, and beginning to give him directions about some-

something of great Importance and Secrecy, he took notice that Mr. *Moreland*, one of the Clerks, afterward Sir *Samuel Moreland*, was in the Room, which he had not observ'd before; and fearing he might have overheard their Discourse, though he pretended to be asleep upon his Desk, he drew a Ponyard, which he always carried under his Coat, and was going to dispatch *Moreland* upon the Spot, if *Thurlo* had not with great Intreaties prevail'd with him to desist, assuring him that *Moreland* had sat up two Nights together, and was now certainly fast asleep.

There was not the smallest Accident that befel King *Charles* the Second in his *Exile*, but he knew it perfectly well; in so much that having given leave to an *English* Nobleman to Travel, upon condition he should not see *Charles Stuart*; he ask'd him at his Return, If he had punctually obey'd his Commands? Which the other affirming he had; *Cromwell* replied, *It's true you did not see him; for to keep your Word with me, you agreed to meet in the dark, the Candles being put out for that end: And withal,* told him all the particulars that pass'd in Conversation betwixt the King and him at their Meeting.

That

The Bu-  
siness of  
*Dunkirk.*

That he had Spies about King *Charles*, was not strange; but his Intelligence reach'd the most secret *Transactions* of other Princes; and when the Matter was communicated to but very few. Of which we have a notable Instance in the Business of *Dunkirk*. There was an *Article* in the *Treaty* between *France* and the *Protector*, That if *Dunkirk* came to be taken, it should be immediately deliver'd up to the *English*; and his Ambassador *Lockart* had Orders to take possession of it accordingly. When the *French Army*, being join'd with the *English Auxiliaries*, was in its March to Invest the Town, *Cromwell* sent one morning for the *French Ambassador* to *Whitehall*, and upbraided him publickly for his Master's design'd Breach of Promise, in giving secret Orders to the *French General* to keep Possession of *Dunkirk*, in case it was taken, contrary to the *Treaty* between them. The Ambassador protested he knew nothing of the matter, as indeed he did not, and begg'd leave to assure him, that there was no such thing thought of. Upon which *Cromwell* pulling a Paper out of his Pocket, Here (says he) is the Copy of the Cardinal's Order: And I desire you to dispatch immediately an Express, to let him

him know, that I am not to be impos'd upon; and that if he deliver not up the Keys of the Town of Dunkirk to Lockhart within an hour after it shall be taken, tell him, I'll come in Person, and demand them at the Gates of Paris. There were but Four Persons said to be privy to this Order, the Queen-Mother, the Cardinal, the Marechal de Turenne, and a Secretary, whose Name it is not fit at this time to mention. The Cardinal for a long time blam'd the Queen, as if she might possibly have blabb'd it out to some of her Women: Whereas it was found, after the Secretary's death, That he had kept a secret Correspondence with Cromwell for several Years; and therefore it was not doubted but he had sent him the Copy of the Order above-mention'd.

The Message had its effect; for Dunkirk was put into the possession of the English. And to palliate the matter, the Duke and Marechal of Crequy was dispatch'd into England Ambassador Extraordinary, to Compliment Cromwell; attended with a numerous and Splendid Train of Persons of Quality; among whom was a Prince of the Blood, and Muncini, Mazarine's Nephew; who brought a Letter from his Uncle to the

I Fro-



Protector, full of the highest Expressions of Respect; and assuring his Highness, That *being within view of the English Shore, nothing but the King's Indisposition* (who lay then ill of the Small-Pox at Calais) could have hinder'd him to come over to England, that he might enjoy the Honour of waiting upon one of the Greatest men that ever was; and whom next to his Master, his greatest Ambition was to serve. But being depriv'd of so great a happiness, he had sent the Person that was nearest to him in Blood, to assure him of the profound Veneration he had for his Person, and how much he was resolv'd, to the utmost of his power, to cultivate a perpetual Amity and Friendship betwixt his Master and him.

Few Princes ever bore their Character higher upon all occasions, than Oliver Cromwell, especially in his *Treaties with Crown'd-Heads*. And it's a thing without Example, that's mention'd by one of the best inform'd *Historians* of the Age, *Puffendorf*, in the Life of the late Elector of *Brandenburgh*, That in *Cromwell's* League with *France* against *Spain*, he would not allow the *French King* to call himself King of *France*, but of the *French*; whereas he took to himself not only the Title of *Protector of England*,  
but

but likewise of *France*. And which is yet more surprizing, and which can hardly be believ'd, but for the Authority of the Author, whose own Words are in the Margin, in the Instrument of the Treaty, the *Protector's* Name was put before the *French King's*. It's true, *France* was then under a *Minority*, and was not arriv'd at that Greatness to which it has since attain'd. Towards which, *Cromwell* contributed not a little, by that *League* with *France* against *Spain*; being the falsest Step he ever made, with respect to the *Tranquility of Europe*.

*Puffendorf de Rebus Gestis Frederici Wilhelmi Electoris Brandenburgici, p. 313.*

*Id porro Bellum Protectoris in Hispanos adeo opportunum, Gallo ac-*

*cedebat, ut summo Studio istum sœdore sibi innectere studeret, etiam concessio, ut Cromwellus eundem, Gallorum Regem, non Galliarum nuncuparet, aliâs ipse Protectoris quoque Franciæ, vocabulum, sicut Angliæ assumpturus: Simul pateretur Cromwellum Instrumento suo Nomen titulumque ante Gallicum ponere.*

As every thing did contribute to the Fall of King *Charles I.* so did every thing contribute to the *Rise of Cromwell*. And as there was no design at first against the King's Life, so it's probable that *Cromwell* had no thoughts, for a long time, of ever arriving at what he afterwards was. It is known he was once in Treaty with the King, after the Army had carried his Majesty away from *Holmby House*, to have restor'd him to the Throne; which

probably he would have done, if the Secret had not been like to take Vent, by the Indiscretion of some about the King; which push'd *Cromwell* on to prevent *his own*, by the *Ruin of the King*.

It's likewise certain, that *the Title of Protector* did not satisfie his Ambition, but that he aim'd to be King. The Matter was for some time under Consideration, both in his *Mock Parliament*, and *Council of State*; insomuch, that a *Crown* was actually made, and brought to *Whitehall* for that purpose. But the Aversion he found in the Army against it, and the fear of the *Commonwealth-Party*, oblig'd him to lay the Thoughts of it aside, at least for that time. Yet it's probable these high Aims did not dye, but with himself: For to be able with the help of *Spanish Gold* to carry on his Design in *England*, without depending upon a Parliament for Money, is thought was the true Motive of his Attempt upon *St. Domingo*; which was the only Action of War he fail'd in.

But notwithstanding his specious Pretences to the contrary, *Cromwell* invaded and betrayed the Liberties of his Countrey, and acted a more *Tyrannical and Arbitrary Part*, than all the Kings of *England*.

land together had done since the *Norman Conquest*. And yet after all, his Good Fortune accompanied him to the last; for after a long Chain of Success, he died in peace, and in the Arms of his Friends; was buried among the Kings with a Royal Pomp, and his Death *condol'd* by the Greatest *Princes* and *States* of *Christendom*, in *Solemn Embassies* to his Son.

But this is not all; for whatever Reasons the House of *Austria* had to hate the Memory of *Cromwell*, yet his causing the *Portugal Ambassador's* Brother to be Executed for a *Tumult* in *London*, notwithstanding his *Plea* of being a *Publick Minister* as well as his Brother, was near Twenty Years after *Cromwell's* Death, brought as a Precedent by the present *Emperor*, to justify his arresting and carrying off the *Prince of Furstenburgh* at the Treaty of *Cologne*, notwithstanding *Furstenburgh's* being a *Plenipotentiary* for the *Elector* of that Name. And in the Printed *Manifesto* published by the *Emperor* upon that occasion, this piece of *Cromwell's* Justice in executing the *Portuguese Gentleman*, is related at large.

To sum up *Cromwell's* Character, it's observable, That as the *Ides of March* were equally fortunate and fatal to *Ju-*



*lius Cæsar*, another famous Invader of the Liberties of his Countrey; so was the *Third of September* to *Oliver Cromwell*; For on that Day he was born; on that Day he fought the Three great Battels of *Marston Moor*, *Worcester*, and *Dunbar*; and on that Day he died.

*Cromwell* died in the peaceable Possession of the *Sovereign Power*, though disguis'd under another Name, and left it to a Son that *had neither Heart nor Abilities to keep it*. The *Genius* of the Nation return'd to its *Natural Byass*; and *Monarchy* was so much interwoven with the *Laws*, *Customs*, and the *first Threads of the English Constitution*, that it was altogether impossible it could be ever totally worn out. Our Ancestors had wisely settled themselves upon that *Bottom*; and those very Men that some Years before had justled out *Monarchy*, upon the account of its *Encroachments* upon the *Rights of the People*, were become as zealous now to restore it again, upon the *Encroachments* that the assuming part of the People had made of late upon the *Rights of their Fellow-Subjects*. For near two Years together after *Cromwell's* Death, the Government of *England* underwent various Shapes, and every Month almost

almost produc'd a New Scheme; till in the end all these Convulsions co-operated to turn the Nation again upon its True and Ancient Basis. Thence it was, that the Son of King Charles the First, after Ten Years Exile, was restor'd to his Father's Throne in the Year 1660, without Blood, or any Remarkable Opposition.

The Restoration of King Charles II.

This Revolution was the more to be admir'd, since not only all Attempts to bring King Charles back by force of Arms, prov'd ineffectual; but that notwithstanding upon Cromwell's Death, every thing at home seem'd to concur to his Restoration; yet the bare Name of an English Parliament, though but the Shadow of what formerly it was, continued to be so terrible abroad, that neither France nor Spain durst venture to give King Charles the least assistance to regain his Throne; but on the contrary, were oblig'd to treat him in a manner altogether unworthy of a Crown'd Head: As appears by the following Instances at the Treaty of the Pyrenees.

The Behaviour of the French and Spaniards to K. Charles II. at the Treaty of the Pyrenees.

King Charles after having in vain sought a Sanctuary in France, was necessitated to throw himself upon the Friendship of Spain. He was at Brussels when

he receiv'd the News of the Disposition that was in *England* to restore him just at the time the *Conferences* were to begin between *Cardinal Mazarine*, and *Don Lewis de Haro*, the two *Plenipotentiaries* of *France* and *Spain*, in order to a *General Peace*. This determin'd King *Charles* to take Post from *Brussels* through *France*, to the Place of *Treaty*, that he might in Person represent his Interests to these Two *Ministers*. He judg'd the *Spaniards* had reason to be Enemies to the then *Government* in *England*, for not only having taken *Dunkirk* and *Jamaica* from them, and enter'd into a League with *Portugal* against them, but for endeavouring all that was possible to perswade the *French* to continue the War. Upon the other hand it was but reasonable to think that *France* could not be well pleas'd to see the *English* Master of such a *Frontier Town* as *Dunkirk*; or that *Mazarine*, the most Ambitious Man upon Earth, would not be willing to raise his own Glory, by espousing the Cause of an Exil'd Prince, especially when there was so great probability of Success.

Memoirs  
Politick.  
de Monsieur  
Du Mont.

Notwithstanding all these plausible Appearances, King *Charles* made this long Journey to no purpose. It's true,

Don

Don *Lewis de Haro* receiv'd him with all possible Marks of Respect: But the *Cardinal* positively denied him Access. All he could be brought to, after several Messages from the King, was, to allow the Duke of *Ormond* to talk to him upon the Road from *St. Jean de Luz* to the Place of *Treaty*, as if it had been but an accidental Rencounter. *Ormond* obtain'd nothing of the *Cardinal*, but general and ambiguous Answers: Till being press'd, he told *Ormond* plainly, *That all his Master could do for his Cousin the King of England, was to compassionate his Misfortunes; as not being in a condition himself to break with the Government of England, with which his Affairs oblig'd him to keep a good Correspondence.* Over and above this Neglect of *Mazarine's*, King *Charles* had the Mortification to see Ambassador *Lockhart* receiv'd at the same time with the greatest Pomp and Splendor, having the *Cardinal's* Coaches and Guards sent a day's Journey to receive him, and the *Cardinal* giving him the *Right Hand*, which was a Respect he denied the Ambassadors of *Crown'd Heads*. Nor was Don *Lewis* kinder upon the matter to King *Charles*, notwithstanding all his Civilities; for having ask'd the Command



mand of the Army in *Flanders*, which the Prince of *Conde* was by the *Treaty* oblig'd to quit, *Don Lewis* refus'd it. All which will be a lasting Example to Posterity, *how little Trust is to be repos'd in Foreign Aid, when a Prince comes to need it, for recovering his Throne.*

Monk's  
part in the  
Restoration.

It were the highest Injustice to deny *General Monk* the greatest share of the Honour in *Restoring King Charles II.* and yet it is a question whether his Design to do it, was of so long standing as some have reported. It's probable he had no Thoughts that way, till about the time that *Richard Cromwell* was depriv'd of the Government: In which he was afterwards the more confirm'd, upon the *Army in England's* setting up once more for themselves. If he had really form'd an Intention at that time to bring back the King, it must be confess'd he acted the part of a *Politician* much better than that of a *Christian*; for he declar'd once again at that time, *for a Commonwealth, without the King, a Single Person, or House of Lords*; and formally Renounc'd the *Family of the Stuarts*. All which will appear by a *Letter* sign'd by him and his Officers to the Parliament, upon *Richard's* Abdication, and the *Declaration*  
it

it self, mention'd at length in the *Appendix*.

*Appendix,*  
Numb. II.  
p. 360.

It's hardly to be imagin'd he had a mind to set up for himself, as his Enemies have given out; for he could not but see the whole Nation was returning apace to their *Ancient Monarchical Principles*; and therefore he had little else to do, but to comply a while with the Times, till by declaring for a *Free Parliament*, he pav'd the way for the King's Return. It's certain the People that then assum'd the *Supreme Power*, were jealous of his Intentions; and it was within an Ace he escap'd a Trap laid for him, just at the time when he was ready to march from *Scotland*; which would have inevitably ruin'd his Design, if a mere Accident had not interven'd.

For *Monk* keeping his ordinary Residence at *Dalkeith*, some four Miles on this side of *Edinburgh*; the *London Packet* touch'd constantly there, that the *General* might have his Letters before it reach'd *Edinburgh*. The *Committee of Safety* being resolv'd to secure *Monk*, dispatch'd secret Orders to *Scotland* by the ordinary Pacquet, lest an Express might give suspicion; and instead of directing the Label for *Dalkeith*, as was usual,

usual, it was order'd straight for *Edinburgh*. It happen'd that one of *Monk's* Lifeguard met accidentally the *Post* turning out of the Road that led to *Dalkeith*, and finding he had not touch'd there, he brought him back, notwithstanding the *Label* was directed otherwise. *Monk* suspecting something, open'd all the *Letters* that he found directed to the *Officers* of the *Army*; among which there was one from the *Committee of Safety* to Colonel *Thomas Wilks*, ordering him to *use the most effectual, speedy and secret way to secure the Person of General Monk, and to send him up to London under a strong Guard, in a Frigate that lay in Leith Road; and then to take upon him the Command of the Army, till further Order.*

Having taken out this, and what other *Letters* he thought fit, together with his own from the same *Committee*, full of high Compliments, and Expressions of Trust, he sent away the *Pacquet* as it was directed. But having communicated the matter to some of his particular Friends, he gave Orders for a *General Review* of the *Army* to be made next morning at *Edinburgh*, where he arrested Colonel *Wilks*, and some other *Officers* he had

had reason to suspect, and sent them Prisoners to the *Castle*; filling up their *Commissions* with others of his own Creatures.

*Monk* in his March through *England*, and after he came to *London*, carried on the Thread of Diffimulation with wonderful dexterity, till all things were fully ripe for throwing off the *Mask*, and calling home the King. As he was singularly happy in being the Chief Instrument of that *Revolution*, he was no less in the Sense King *Charles* continued to express of so great an Obligation. And it show'd him to be a Man of true Judgment, That the *Duke of Albemarle* behav'd himself in such a manner to the Prince he had thus oblig'd, as never to seem to overvalue the Services of *General Monk*.

*King Charles the Second* prov'd one of the Finest Gentlemen of the Age, and had Abilities to make one of the Best of Kings. The first Years of his Reign were a continued *Jubilee*. And while we were reaping the Fruits of Peace at Home, after the Miseries of a long *Civil War*, a Potent Neighbour was laying the Foundation of a *Power* Abroad, that has since



since been the Envy and Terror of *Europe*. One might have thought that his *Parliament* had glutted his Ambition to the full, by heaping those *Prerogatives* upon him, which had been contested for with his Father, at the Expence of so much Blood and Treasure: But he grasp'd early after more, and from his first Accession to the Crown, show'd but little Inclination to depend upon Parliaments. Of which we have a remarkable Instance in an Affair that was one of the true Causes of the Disgrace of that Great Man, *Chancellor Clarendon*, which happen'd a few Years after.

It looks as if Heaven took a more than ordinary Care of *England*, that we did not throw up our Liberties all at once, upon the *Restoration* of that King; for though some were for bringing him back upon *Terms*, yet after he was once come, he possess'd so entirely the Hearts of his People, that they thought nothing was too much for them to grant, or for him to receive. Among other Designs to please him, there was one form'd at *Court*, to settle such a *Revenue* upon him by Parliament during Life, as should place him beyond the Necessity of asking more, except in the Case of a War, or  
some

some such extraordinary Occasion. The Earl of *Southampton*, Lord High *Treasurer*, came heartily into it, out of a mere Principle of Honour and Affection to the King; but *Chancellor Clarendon* secretly oppos'd it. It happen'd that they two had a private Conference about the matter; and the *Chancellor* being earnest to bring the *Treasurer* to his Opinion, took the freedom to tell him, That he was better acquainted with the King's Temper and Inclinations, than *Southampton* could reasonably expect to be, having had long and intimate Acquaintance with his Majesty abroad; and that he knew him so well, that if such a Revenue was once settled upon him for Life, *neither of them Two would be of any further use; and that they were not in probability to see many more Sessions of Parliament during that Reign.* *Southampton* was brought over; but this Passage could not be kept so secret, but it came to King *Charles* his Ears, which together with other things wherein *Clarendon* was misrepresented to him, prov'd the true reason why he abandon'd him to his Enemies.

Notwithstanding this disappointment, King *Charles* made a shift, partly by his obliging Carriage, partly by other *Inducements,*

*ments*, to get more Money from his first Parliament towards the Expence of his Pleasures, than all his Predecessors of the *Norman Race* had obtain'd before, towards the Charges of their Wars. This Parliament had like to have been *Perpetual*; if the Vigor wherewith they began to prosecute the *Popish Plot*, and the Resentment they express'd against his *Brother*, had not oblig'd him, much against his Will, to part with them, after they had sat near Nineteen Years.

The Discovery of the Popish Plot.

That there was at that time a *Popish Plot*, and that there always has been one since the *Reformation*, to support, if not restore the *Romish Religion* in *England*, scarce any body calls in question. How far the near Prospect of a *Popish Successor* ripen'd the Hopes, and gave new Vigor to the Designs of that *Party*, and what Methods they were then upon, to bring those Designs about, *Coleman's Letters* alone, without any other concurring Evidence, are more than sufficient to put the matter out of doubt. But what *Superstructures* might have been afterwards built upon an unquestionable Foundation, and how far some of the *Witnesses* of that *Plot* might come to darken Truth by subsequent Additions of their own, must

must be deferr'd till *the Great Account*, to be made before a *Higher Tribunal*: And till then, a great part of the *Popish Plot*, as it was then sworn to, will in all human probability lye *among the darkeſt Scenes of our English Hiſtory*. However, this is certain, the *Discovery of the Popish Plot* had great and various Effects upon the Nation; And it's from this remarkable Period of Time, we may juſtly reckon a *New Era* in the *English Account*.

In the firſt place, it awaken'd the Na- Its Effects  
tion out of a deep Lethargy they had been in for Nineteen Years together; and alarm'd them with *Fears* and *Jealouſies* that have been found to our ſad Experience but too well grounded. In the next, it gave the Riſe to, at leaſt ſetled that unhappy diſtinction of *Whig* and *Tory* among the People of *England*, that has ſince occaſion'd ſo many Miſchiefs. And laſtly, the *Discovery of the Popish Plot* began that open *Struggle* between King *Charles* and his People, that occaſion'd him not only to diſſolve his firſt *Favourite Parliament*, and the Three others that ſucceeded; but likewiſe to call no more during the reſt of his Reign. All which made way for bringing in queſtion the *Charters of London*, and other

K                      Corpo-



*Corporations*, with a great many dismal Effects that follow'd. It was likewise about this time, that a certain Set of Men began a second time to adopt into our Religion a *Mahometan* Principle, under the Names of *Passive Obedience* and *Non-Resistance*; which since the time of the *Impostor* that first broach'd it, has been the means to enslave a great part of the World.

The Bill  
of Exclu-  
sion.

The great share which the *Duke of York* was suppos'd to have had very early, in a Design to overturn our *Religion* and *Liberties*, and the mighty Hopes which the near Prospect of a Popish *Successor* gave the *Roman Catholics*, of bringing about their *Grand Project* of rooting out the Northern *Heresy*, were the Reasons why a great part of Both *Houses* of Parliament had recourse to a *Bill of Exclusion* against the *Duke*, as the only effectual means they could think on in that Juncture, to prevent Our intended Ruin. This Prince had been privately reconcil'd to *Rome* in the time of his *Exile*: But it seems it was not thought convenient he should declare himself till several Years after. And though he had abandon'd the Worship of the Church of *England*, it was accounted a heinous Crime to say  
he

he was a *Roman-Catholick*, when every body knew that he was one ; and some were *Fin'd* in great Sums of Money for saying it. King *Charles's* Conversion (if we believe *Huddleston* the Priest) was of an older Date : But, if true, he either wanted Courage, or thought it not his Interest to declare himself in his Lifetime. If he had any design of introducing *Popery*, he knew the Temper of the Nation too well, to imagine it could be brought about in a short time, or by such open and barefac'd Methods as his *Brother* was pleas'd afterwards to put in practice.

But the truth is, King *Charles* was neither *Bigot* enough to any Religion, nor lov'd his Ease so little, as to embark in a Business that must at least have disturb'd his *Quiet*, if not hazarded his *Crown*. The *Romish Emissaries* knowing this, were resolv'd to make sure of one of the Brothers : And the *Duke* was now the *Rising Sun* ; King *Charles* having no prospect of Issue by the *Queen*. It was not the *Roman Catholicks* alone, that began to pay him their early Devotions ; there were others that came nothing short of them in their Addresses to him. He had in the time of his Banishment, and after the Restoration, acquir'd the Reputation

of being Brave, and skill'd in the Art of War: *Flanders* and the *Ocean* were the *Theatres* on which he had given unquestionable Proofs of both; having Commanded the *Spanish Horse* in the *one*, and the *English Fleet* on the *other*. From a Prince thus possess'd of a Warlike Character, and thus devoted to the *See* of *Rome*, it was no wonder the *Roman Catholics* expected, and the *Protestants* fear'd some extraordinary Change in *England*, if ever he should come to wear the *Crown*. And therefore as it was the Interest of the *first* to have him upon the *Throne*, so it was equally the Interest of the *latter* to exclude him from it.

It's said King *Charles* came in at first to the *Bill of Exclusion*, or seem'd to do so. The *Favourite Mistress* was prevail'd with, from secret Motives and Prospects of her own, to concur with others in persuading him to abandon his *Brother*; and waving the *Duke's Right*, to accept of an Act of Parliament in his own favour, like that made in the Reign of *Henry VIII.* by which he should have a Power invested in him, to dispose of the *Crown* at his Death, under such Restrictions and Limitations as should be agreed on.

Whether

Whether any such *Act* was really intended, it's hard to determine; but it's certain such an Offer was made to King *Charles* with a Promise of a considerable Sum of Money, towards the supplying his pressing Wants. It's likewise certain, that King *Charles* seem'd willing to accept of it; till it happen'd that a *Foreign Court*, whose interest it was to support the *Duke of York*, struck up a Bargain with the King, to give him more Money for *refusing*, than had been offer'd him for *consenting* to the *Bill of Exclusion*.

Some time before the *Popish Plot* came upon the *Stage*, King *Charles* had been prevail'd with to marry the *Eldest* of his *Nieces* to the *Prince of Orange*, as he did afterwards the *Youngest* to the *Prince of Denmark*: The happiest Actions of his Life, and by which he made a sufficient Attonement for all the Errors of his Reign. It were Ingratitude to enquire too narrowly into the Motives that induc'd him to these *Matches*: It's enough to entail a lasting Honour on his Name, that he did it, and did it against the Advice of his Brother, and in spite of all the Sollicitations that were made to him from Abroad, to marry them to Princes of the *Romish* Religion. The Parliament



had in their view the *Princess of Orange*, in the *Bill of Exclusion*; and it was She and the Prince her Husband that were to have fill'd the Throne, upon the Death of their Uncle. But King *Charles* either not daring, or not willing to consent to the *Bill*, he dissolv'd both that and the next Parliament at *Oxford*, merely to ward off the Blow that threaten'd his Brother.

After the Dissolution of the *Oxford Parliament*, King *Charles* shew'd but little Inclination to call any more; and was prevail'd with to enter into harsher Measures than hitherto he had taken; and which seem'd contrary to his Natural Goodness and Temper. The *Charters* of the City of *London*, and other *Corporations*, stood in the way of an *Absolute Government*; and it was resolv'd to break through this *Barrier*. In order to which, *Quo Warranto's* were brought against them; and in progress of time they were either surrendred by the *Corporations* themselves, or vacated in *Westminster-Hall*, by a sett of *Judges* pickt out for that purpose. And it was resolv'd thereby to make one of the *Estates* of Parliament depend entirely upon the *Will* and *Nomination* of the Prince.

While

While these *Quo Warranto's* were going on, whole Peals of *Anathema's* were rung out against those *Patriots* that had stood up for the Liberties of their Countrey in the Preceding Parliaments. And it was lookt upon as a Crime against the State, for any one to regret the approaching Fate of his Countrey. Even the *Holy Scriptures* themselves were made a *Stale* for *Arbitrary Power*; and the Laws which were given to the *Jews* as they were a *Political State*, were now brought in upon every occasion, to countenance the Designs of the Court. As if those Laws which were intended only to support the Political Government of the *Jews*, were the real Foundation of the Christian Religion; or that the Constitution of *England* was founded upon the *Jewish Doctrine*. All which was not much for the Honour of those Gentlemen that broach'd that Notion. This was a time never to be forgot, when to wish well to our Countrey, was a Crime; and when Heaven it self was rank'd upon our Enemies side, by some that pretended to expound its Will. In some places a new kind of *Funeral Harangues* came in fashion: Our *Laws*, our *Liberties*, our *Parliaments*, our *Native Rights* were to be

K 4

buried;

buried, but instead of dropping a Tear at their *Funeral*, fulsom *Panegyrics* were made upon their Murtherers, and Curses denounc'd against those that would have retriev'd them from Destruction.

The Dis-  
grace of  
the Duke  
of Mon-  
mouth, and  
its Conse-  
quences.

All these Transactions were attended with the Publick Disgrace of the *Duke of Monmouth*. This Gentleman stood possess'd of all the Qualities requisite to gain him the Love of the People, and stir up the Jealousy of the *Duke of York*. King *Charles* had heap'd *Honours* upon him; and nothing pleas'd him so much as to see him *Great*. He had been sent to *Scotland* in the Year 1679. to suppress an *Insurrection* which the Severity of *Lauderdale's Administration* had occasion'd; where his Lenity towards a People made by Oppression mad, gain'd him the ill-will of a Predominant Party at Court. The Zeal he shew'd some time after in the prosecution of the *Popish Plot*, and his Friendships with some that were profess'd Enemies to the *Duke*, concurr'd to his Fall. Yet King *Charles* still continued underhand the same Tenderness for him; though he was declar'd in publick to be in Disgrace. The *Duke's Faction* at home, and a *Foreign Interest* abroad, were too powerful for King *Charles* to grapple

grapple with, even though the Fortune of a *Favourite Son* was at stake.

The more he was depress'd by the Envy of his Uncle, the higher he rose in the Affections of the People; till the breaking out of what was call'd the *Protestant Plot*, overwhelm'd not only him, but a whole *Party* with him. This Plot was in some part a greater *Mystery* than the Popish Plot had been before, and had more dismal Effects. The shatter'd Remains of *English Liberty* were then attack'd on every side; and some of the *Noblest Blood* in the Nation was offer'd up a Sacrifice to the *Manes* of Popish Martyrs, and made to atone for the *Bill of Exclusion*. *Swearing* came once more into Fashion, and a new *Evidence-Office* was erected at *Whitehall*. But whereas the *Witnesses* of the *Popish Plot* were brow-beaten and discourag'd, those of the *Protestant Plot* were highly encourag'd; and instead of *Judges* and *Juries* that might perhaps boggle at *half-Evidence*, as it fell out in the Prosecution of the former; care was taken in this to pick out such as should stick at nothing to serve a Turn. It was by such *Judges* and *Juries* that the Lord *Russel* and Mr. *Sidney* fell; and the cutting off those

The Protestant Plot.

Two



Two Nobles Lives, may be reckon'd among the first Triumphs of the Duke's Party in *England*.

It's true King *Charles* seem'd inclin'd to pardon both the one and the other; and the very day the Lord *Russel* was executed, some Words escap'd him, that shew'd sufficiently his Irresolution in that matter: But by this time he was too far gone, to make a handsome Retreat on a sudden; and there was observed ever after, a sensible Change in his Temper; for from an Easiness and Debonairness that was natural to him, he came at length to treat men with *Hard Names*, and upon some occasions to express a Severity in his Disposition, that he had been ever averse to before.

The rest of that Reign was one continued *Invasion* upon the *Rights* of the People, and the Nation seem'd unwilling now to contend for them any more. King *Charles*, notwithstanding his great Abilities and Fitness for business, appear'd to be quite lull'd asleep with the Charms of a new-swell'd-up *Prerogative*; while some of our *Neighbours* were playing their Game, to the Prejudice of *England* abroad, and the *Duke's* Creatures were managing all things to their own mind at home.

Nature

Nature prevail'd upon King *Charles* at length ; and the shame of seeing himself impos'd upon by others far short of him in Parts, and that the *Court* was anticipating his Death, by their Addresses to his Brother, as if he had been already King, did help to awaken him out of his Slumber, and brought him to lay a Project for a mighty Change in the Affairs of *England*, which probably might have made both him and the Nation happy. If he had liv'd but a few Weeks longer, *Monmouth* had been recall'd to *Court*, the Duke of *Tork* had been sent beyond Sea, and a New *Parliament* conven'd. But what further was to follow, must be buried with his Ashes, there being nothing left us, but bare Suspensions of what might have been. This is certain, his Death came opportunely for the *Duke* ; and in such a Manner, and with such Circumstances, as will be a Problem to posterity, whether he died a Natural Death, or was hasten'd to his Grave by Treachery.

In so nice a Point as this is, it becomes one that would write Impartially, to set down with the exactest Fidelity, every thing of Moment of either side, that may determine the Reader in his Judgment, without venturing to give his own.

The  
Death of  
King  
*Charles II.*

This

This Rule I have set to my self, in laying down the following Particulars.

The  
Suspici-  
ons about  
the Man-  
ner of it  
consider'd.

It's confess few Princes come to dye a sudden Death, but the World is apt to attribute it to Foul Play, especially if attended with unusual Circumstances in the Time and Manner of it. King *Charles* had a healthful Constitution beyond most men, and took great care to preserve it by Diet and Exercise, which naturally promise a long Life. And it was more extraordinary to see such a Man dye before Threescore, than another in the Bloom of Youth. Now if he died a Natural Death, it's agreed by all, that it must have been an *Apoplexy*. This Disease seizes all the Vital Faculties at once; and yet for the most part, does not only give some short Warnings of its Approach by unusual Affections of the Head, but many times is occasion'd by some evident preceding Cause. In King *Charles's* Case, there appear'd no visible Cause either *near* or *remote*, to which with any certainty of Reason, his Disease could be ascrib'd; and the Forerunners of it were rather to be found in the Stomach and Bowels, than in the Head. For after he was a-bed, he was overheard to groan most of the Night: And both

both then, and next Morning, before he fell into the *Fit*, he complain'd first of a heavy Oppression in his Stomach, and about his Heart, and afterwards of a sharp Pain in those Parts; all which Symptoms had but little relation to an *Apoplexy*. That Morning there appear'd to every body about him a *Ghastliness* and *Paleness* in his Looks: And when he sat down to be shav'd, just before the *Fit* took him, he could not sit straight, as he used to do, but continued in a stooping Posture, with his Hand upon his Stomach, till the *Fit* came. After he had been brought out of it by opening a Vein, he complain'd of a Racking Pain in his Stomach, and of no Indisposition any where else: And during the whole time of his Sickness, and even when he seem'd most Insensible, he was observ'd to lay his Hand for the most part upon his Stomach, in a moaning Posture, and continued so to his Death. And so violent was the Pain, that when all hopes were gone, the Physicians were desir'd to use all their Art to procure him an *Easy Death*.

So much for the Distemper it self: There remains some things to be taken notice of, that fell out before and after his Death. A few days before he was taken ill,

ill,



ill, King *Charles* being in Company where the present Posture of Affairs was discours'd of, there escap'd him some warm Expressions about the uneasy Circumstances he was plung'd into, and the ill Measures had been given him: And how in a certain particular Affair he was pleas'd to mention he had been abus'd: Adding in some Passion, *That if he liv'd but a Month longer, he would find a way to make himself easy for the rest of his Life.* This Passage was whisper'd abroad next day; and the Rumour of recalling the Duke of *Monmouth*, and sending away the Duke of *York*, came to take Air about the same time. Indeed all things were making ready, to put the latter in execution; and there is reason to believe the King had intimated as much to the Duke himself; for some of his Richest Furniture was put up, and his chief Servants order'd to be in a readiness to attend their Master upon an Hour's warning; and Yachts were waiting to Transport some Person of Quality, without mentioning who it was, or whither bound. The *Romish* Party that manag'd about Court, were observ'd to be more than ordinary diligent and busy up and down *Whitehall* and *St. James's*, as if some very important  
Affair

Affair was in agitation; and a new and unusual Concern was to be seen on their Countenances. Nor was it any wonder; for in this suspected Change they were like to be the only Losers, and all their teeming Hopes were in a fair way to be disappointed. How far the Principles of some of that Party might leave them at liberty to push on their Revenge for this design'd Affront, as well as to prevent the Blow that threatn'd them, though without the Privacy, much less the Consent of the Duke of York, is left to the Reader to judge.

There was a Foreign *Minister*, that some days before the King fell ill, order'd his Steward to buy a considerable Parcel of Black Cloth, which serv'd him and his Retinue after for Mourning: And the late Ambassador *Don Pedro Ronquillo*, made it no Secret, that he had a Letter from *Flanders* the Week before King *Charles* died, that took notice of his Death, as the News there. But both these might fall out by mere Accident.

There remains two things more, that deserve some Consideration in this matter. When his Body was open'd, there was not sufficient time given for taking an exact Observation of his Stomach and Bowels;

Bowels; which one would think ought chiefly to have been done, considering the violent Pains he had there: And when a certain Physician seem'd to be more inquisitive than ordinary about the Condition of those Parts, he was taken aside and reprov'd for his *needleſs Curioſity*. In the next place, his Body ſtunk ſo extremely within a few Hours after his Death, notwithstanding the Coldneſs of the Seaſon, that the People about him were extremely offended with the Smell: Which is a thing very extraordinary, in one of his ſtrong and healthful Conſtitution; and is not a proper Conſequent of a mere *Apopleſtical* Diſtemper.

There was ſome Weight laid upon an Accident that fell out at *Windſor* ſome Years before his Death: For the King drinking more liberally than uſual, after the Fatigue of Riding, he retir'd to the next Room, and wrapping himſelf up in his Cloak, fell aſleep upon a Couch. He was but a little time come back to the Company, when a Servant belonging to one of them, lay down upon the ſame Couch, in the King's Cloak, and was found ſtabb'd dead with a Ponyard. Nor was it ever known how it happen'd, but the matter hush'd up, and no Enquiry made about it. T

To conclude ; Dr. *Short*, who was a Man of great Probity and Learning, and a *Roman Catholick*, made no scruple to declare his Opinion to some of his intimate Friends , that he believ'd King *Charles* had foul Play done him. And when he came to die himself, express'd some suspicion that he had met with the same Treatment for opening his Mind too freely in that Point.

So much for the Circumstances of King *Charles's* Death that seem to have an ill Aspect. There are others that seem to destroy all Suspicions of Treachery in the matter.

As First, He had liv'd so fast, as might enervate in a great measure the Natural Force of his Constitution, and exhaust his Animal Spirits ; and therefore he might be more subject to an Apoplexy, which is a Disease that weakens and locks up these Spirits from performing their usual Functions. And though in his later Years he had given himself more up to the Pleasures of Wine than of Women, that might rather be the effect of Age than of Choice.

Next, it's known he had been once or twice attack'd before, with *Fits* that much resembled those of which he after-

L                      wards



wards died: And yet as the manner of them is told, they look rather to have been *Convulsive Motions*, than an *Apo-plexy*; seeing they were attended with violent *Contorsions* of his Face, and *Convulsions* of his whole Body and Limbs. This is the more confirm'd, by a Passage that happen'd during the Heat of the *Papish Plot*. King Charles had some secret Matters to manage at that time, by the means of a *Romish Priest* then beyond Sea, whom he order'd to be privately sent for: And the Gentleman employ'd betwixt the King and him (from whom I had the Story) was directed to bring him in a Disguise to *White-hall*. The King and the Priest were a considerable time together alone in the Closet, and the Gentleman attended in the next Room: At last the Priest came out with all the Marks of Fright and Astonishment in his Face; and having recover'd himself a little, he told the Gentleman, That he had run the greatest Risque ever Man did; for while he was with the King, his Majesty was suddenly surpriz'd with a *Fit*, accompanied with violent *Convulsions* of his Body, and *Contorsions* of his Face, which lasted for some Moments; and when he was going

going to call out for help, the King held him by force till it was over, and then bid him not be afraid, for he had been troubled with the like before; the Priest adding what a condition he should have been in, considering his Religion, and the present Juncture of Affairs, if the King had died of that *Fit*, and no body in the Room with him besides himself.

But leaving this Story to the Credit of the Priest; there might be another Natural Cause assign'd for King *Charles's* falling into such a *Fit* as that of which he died; which is this: He had had for some time an Issue in his Leg, which run much, and consequently must have made a great Revulsion from his Head, upon which account it's probable it was made. A few Weeks before his Death, he had let it be dried up, contrary to the Advice of his Physicians, who told him it would prejudice his Health. Their Prognostick was partly true in this, that there came a painful Tumor upon the place where the Issue had been, which prov'd very obstinate, and was not thoroughly heal'd up when he died.

In fine, it is agreed on all hands, that King *Charles* express'd no suspicion of his being poyson'd, during all the time of

L 2

his

his Sickness : Though it must be also observed, that his *Fits* were so violent, that he could not speak when they were upon him, and shew'd an aversion to speaking during the Intervals. And there was not any thing to be seen upon opening his Body, that could reasonably be attributed to the force of Poyson. Yet to allow these Considerations no more weight than they can well bear, this must be acknowledged, That there are Poysons which affect originally the Animal Spirits, and are of so subtle a nature, that they leave no concluding Marks upon the Bodies of those they kill.

The Character of  
K Charles  
the II.

Thus Reign'd, and thus Dy'd King *Charles the Second*; a Prince endowed with all the Qualities that might justly have render'd him the *Delight of Mankind*, and entitled him to the Character of one of the Greatest *Genius's* that ever sat upon a Throne, if he had not sullied those Excellent Parts with the soft Pleasures of Ease, and had not entertain'd a *Fatal Friendship*, that was incompatible with the Interest of England. His Religion was *Deism*, or rather that which is call'd so; and if in his *Exile*, or at his Death, he went into that of *Rome*; the first was to be imputed to a Complaisance  
for

for the Company he was then oblig'd to keep, and the last to a lazy Diffidence in all other Religions, upon a Review of his past Life, and the near approach of an uncertain State. His Person was tall and well-made, his Constitution Vigorous and Healthy; and it's hard to determine, whether he took more pains to preserve it by Diet and Exercise, or to impair it by Excess in his Pleasures. In Health he was a great Pretender to Physick, and Encourager of *Quacks*, by whom he was often cheated of considerable Sums of Money for their *pretended Secrets*: But whenever he was indispos'd, he consulted his Physicians, and depended on their Skill only.

His Face was compos'd of harsh Features, difficult to be trac'd with the Pencil; yet in the main it was agreeable; and he had a *Noble Majestick Mien*. In contradiction to all the common receiv'd Rules of *Physiognomy*, he was Merciful, Good-natur'd, and in the last Twenty four Years of his Life, Fortunate, if to succeed in most of his Designs, may be call'd so. Never Prince lov'd Ceremony less, or despis'd the Pageantry of a Crown more; yet he was Master of something in his Person and Aspect, that com-



manded both Love and Veneration at once.

He was a great Votary to *Love*, and yet the easiest and most unconcern'd *Rival*. He was for the most part not very nice in the choice of his *Mistresses*, and seldom possess'd of their *First Favours*; yet would sacrifice all to please them, and upon every Caprice of theirs, denied himself the use of his Reason, and acted contrary to his Interest. He was a Respectful, Civil Husband; a Fond Father, a Kind Brother; an easy Enemy; but none of the Firmest or most Grateful Friends: Bountiful by Starts; one day lavish to his Servants; the next leaving them to starve: Glad to win a little Money at Play, and impatient to lose but the thousandth part of what within an Hour after he would throw away in groſs. He seem'd to have had nothing of Jealousy in his Nature, neither in Matters of *Love* nor *Power*. He bore patiently *Rivals* in the one, and *Competitors* in the other; otherwise he would not have contributed to a *Foreign Greatness at Sea*, nor given his Brother so uncontroul'd a share in the *Government*.

Though his Understanding was quick and lively, with a vast Compass of Thought,

Thought, yet he would submit his Judgment in greatest Matters, to others of much inferior Parts: And as he had an extraordinary share of Wit himself, so he lov'd it in others, even when pointed against his own Faults and Mismanagements. He had read but little, yet he had a good Taste of Learning, and would reason nicely upon most Sciences. The *Mechanicks* were one of his peculiar Talents, especially the *Art of building and working of Ships*; which nobody understood better, nor if he had liv'd, would have carried it farther. He had a strong *Laconick* way of Expression, and a Gentle, Easy, and Polite way of Writing: and when he had a mind to lay aside the King, which he often did in select Companies of his own, there were a thousand irresistible Charms in his Conversation. He lov'd Money only to spend it: And would privately accept of a small Sum paid to himself, in lieu of a far greater to be paid into the Exchequer.

He lov'd not Business; and sought every occasion to avoid it; which was one reason that he pass'd so much of his time with his Mistresses: Yet when Necessity call'd him, none of his Council could reason more closely upon *Matters of State*;

and he would often by fits outdo his *Ministers* in Application and Diligence. No Age produc'd a greater Master in the Art of *Diffimulation*; and yet no man was less upon his Guard, or sooner deceiv'd in the Sincerity of others. If he had any one fix'd *Maxim* of Government, it was to play one Party against another, to be thereby the more Master of both; And no Prince understood better how to shift hands upon every Change of the Scene. To sum up his Character, he was dextrous in all the Arts of *Insinuation*; and had acquir'd so great an Ascendant over the Affections of his People, in spite of all the unhappy Measures he had taken, that it may in some sense be said, He died opportunely for *England*; since if he had liv'd, it's probable we might in compliance with him have complimented our selves out of all the Remains of *Liberty*, if he had had but a mind to be Master of them; which it's but Charity to believe he had not, at least immediately before his Death.

There is one thing more that may help to make up the Character of this Prince, That in the Lines and Shape of his Face (all but the Teeth) he had a great Resemblance of the Ancient *Bustoes* and

*Statues* we have of the *Emperor Tiberius* : Infomuch that one of the most Learned Men of this Age told me, That walking in the *Furnesian Gardens* at *Rome*, with a *Noble Italian* that had been at the Court of *England*, he took notice of this Resemblance in an *Antique Statue* of *Tiberius*; and asking the *Italian* if he remembered any Prince he had seen that resembled it, the other immediately nam'd King *Charles*. As there was a great Likeness betwixt these Two Princes in their Faces, there was likewise some in their *Maxims of Government*, the *Time of their Age in which they came to govern*, the *Length of their Reigns*, and the *Suspicions about the manner of their Death*. And indeed, excepting *Tiberius's* Temper, his Cruelty, Jealousy, and unnatural Lusts, any one that's acquainted with both their Stories, will easily find something of a Parallel betwixt them. Nor is this any Reflection upon the Memory of King *Charles*; for except in what I nam'd, *Tiberius* may be reckon'd among the Wisest and the Bravest of those that wore the *Imperial Purple*.

Upon King *Charles's* Death, *James* The Reign of King James II. Duke of *York* mounted the *Throne*, by the Name of King *James the Second*. All the



the former Heats and Animosities against him, and even the very Memory of a *Bill of Exclusion*, seem'd to be now quite forgot, amidst the loud Acclamations of his People at his Accession to the Crown. He had many Years of Experience when he came to it; and few of his Predecessors could boast of the like Advantages: In most of the *Transactions* of the preceding Reign, he had born a considerable Share as to *Action*, but much more as to *Counsel* and *Influence*. In the Post of *Lord High Admiral of England*, he had large opportunities to be fully acquainted with the *Native Strength*, and peculiar Interest of the Nation, I mean the *Affairs of the Navy*; in which he had acquir'd deservedly a great Reputation. He had met with but too many occasions to understand the Genius and Temper of the People he was to govern, and to know how far it was impracticable to overturn the Establish'd Religion, or to introduce a New one, for he had wrestled through a great many Difficulties upon the account of his own. He could not but have a true value for his Brother's great Parts and Abilities, and be acquainted with the Arts by which he gain'd and preserv'd the Affections of his People,

not.

notwithstanding all the Hardships he had been induc'd sometimes to put upon them: And he had seen how fearful and averse he had been to push things too far, or to drive his Subjects to Extremities.

He had before him the Fatal Example of a *Father*, who though he was a Protestant, yet upon a false Suspicion of having a Design to introduce *Popery*, was sent to his Grave by a violent Death; and he was past Childhood when that *Tragedy* happen'd, and had suffer'd Ten Years Banishment, among other Consequences that attended it. He had been acquainted abroad with a Princess fam'd for Parts and Learning, who Resign'd her Crown, apprehending she might be divested of it for embracing the *Romish* Religion, by those very Subjects that held her before in the greatest Veneration, both upon her own account, and that of a Father, who had rais'd them to the highest Pitch of Glory that ever the *Suedish Nation* arriv'd to. And he might have remembered what his Mother said upon her Return to *Somerset house* after the Restoration, That if she had known the Temper of the People of England some Years past, as well as she did then, she had never been oblig'd to  
leave

*Christina*  
the late Q.  
of Sweden.

*leave that House.* But the History of his *Ancestors* might have more fully inform'd him, That those that grasp'd at *Immoderate Power*, or a *Prerogative* above the Law, were always Unfortunate, and their Reigns Inglorious.

There was also a Passage at his Father's Death, which he would have done well to have observ'd: He deliver'd his *George* to Dr. *Juxon* upon the Scaffold, and bid him *Remember*, without saying more. The *Council of State* was willing to know the meaning of that Expression, and call'd the Doctor before them, to give them an Account of it; who told them, *That the King immediately before his coming out to the Place of Execution, had charg'd him to carry to the Prince his Son, his George, with these his Two last Commands, That he should forgive his Murderers: And, That if he ever came to the Crown, he should so govern his Subjects, as not to force them upon Extremities.*

*Puffendorf,*  
*ut supra.*

Over and above all this; one of the best *Historians* of the Age, who had the advantage of all the late *Electors* of *Brandenburgh's Papers and Memoirs*, acquaints us, That King *Charles* the Second delivering to King *James* at his Death, the Key of his *Strong Box*, advis'd him not

to think upon introducing the Romish Religion into England, it being a thing that was both dangerous and impracticable. And that the late *Don Pedro Ronquillo*, the Spanish Ambassador, at his first Audience after the Death of King Charles, having ask'd leave to speak his mind freely upon that occasion, made bold to tell him, That he saw several Priests about him, that he knew would importune him to alter the Establish'd Religion in England; but he wish'd his Majesty would not give Ear to their Advice; for if he did, he was afraid his Majesty would have reason to repent of it when it was too late. This Author tells us, That King James took ill the Freedom of the Spanish Ambassador; and ask'd him in Passion, Whether in Spain they advis'd with their Confessors? Yes, Sir, (answer'd Ronquillo) we do, and that's the reason our Affairs go so ill.

The same Historian does likewise inform us (but he does not tell us upon what grounds), That Pope Innocent XI. writ a Letter to King James upon his Accession to the Crown, to this purpose, That he was highly pleas'd with his Majesty's Zeal for the Catholick Religion; but he was afraid his Majesty might push it too far, and instead of contributing to his own Greatness,

Pope Innocent XIth's Letter to K. James.



ness, and to the Advancement of the Catholick Church, he might come to do both It and himself the greatest Prejudice, by attempting that which his Holiness was well assur'd from long Experience, could not succeed. This Letter does very well agree with what I shall have occasion to mention afterwards, concerning the Earl of Castlemain's Embassy to Rome.

How far he profited by all these Advantages on the one hand, and Examples and Advices on the other, will appear in the Sequel.

The first Speech he made as King, the day his Brother died, gave hopes of a Happy Reign; and even those that had appear'd with the greatest Warmth against him before, were willing now to own themselves to have been mistaken, and were ready to express their Repentance for what was past. For he told them, *That since it had pleas'd Almighty God to place him in that Station, and that he was now to succeed to so good and gracious a King, as well as so very kind a Brother, he thought fit to declare to them, That he would endeavour to follow his Example, and especially in that of his great Clemency and Tenderness to his People: And that though he had been reported to be a man for Arbitra-*

ry Power, yet he was resolv'd to make it his Endeavour to preserve the Government of England both in Church and State, as it was then Establish'd by Law. That he knew the Principles of the Church of England were for Monarchy; and that the Members of it had shew'd themselves good and Loyal Subjects; therefore he would always take care of it, and defend and support it. That he knew that the Laws of England were sufficient to make the King as Great a Monarch as he could wish: And that as he would never depart from the just Rights and Prerogatives of the Crown, so he would never invade any man's Property. Concluding, That as he had often hitherto ventur'd his Life in defence of this Nation, so he was resolv'd to go as far as any man in preserving it in all its just Rights and Liberties.

If a Trajan or an Antoninus had been to lay down a Scheme of Government to make their People happy, they could not have done it in better Terms, nor could the Nation well desire, or in reason wish for more. If his subsequent Actions had come up to it, he had eterniz'd his Name, and might have reviv'd in himself the Memory of those of his Ancestors who have deservedly given them by Posterity, the Character of Good and Great.

This

This promising *Speech* was not many days old, nor King *Charles's* Ashes well cold, when the Nation was alarm'd with a *Proclamation* for *levying that part of the Customs that had been granted to his Brother only for Life*, and was expir'd at his Death. This was not only an open Violation of his *Promise* in his foremention'd *Speech*, but of our *Fundamental Constitution*, by which no Money can be levied on the Subject, but by their Consent in Parliament. As it was contrary to Law, so it was altogether needless at that time, since a Parliament was to meet within a few days, which no body doubted would in a Parliamentary way continue the same Customs for his Life, as they had been for his Brother's.

He was not the first Prince that did illegally seize what he had no Right to: But few Instances can be given of a King that did openly violate the Constitution of his Countrey, to obtain that which he was certain would be granted him in a Legal Manner, and with the Good-Will of his People.

Notwithstanding this unusual Stretch of Power upon his entring into the *Administration*, yet the Parliament he had call'd sat down in a good Humour, and with

with a hearty Inclination to do every thing in compliance with him, that might tend to his Honour or Safety. His *Speech* to both *Houses* was much of the same strain with his former to the *Council* upon his Brother's Death, but more full. *He demanded the settling of his Revenue during Life, as it was in his Brother's time; and acquainted them with the Earl of Argyle's Landing in Scotland; and threaten'd to reward his Treason as it deserv'd.*

This *Speech* buoy'd up the Minds of the People that had been sufficiently flunn'd before with the Unpresidented *Proclamation* for levying the Customs; And so earnest was the Parliament to give the King no just occasion of Displeasure, and so great a Confidence did they place in a *Royal Promise* from the Throne, that they immediately complied with him in the Matter of the *Revenue*, thank'd him for his *Specch*, and resolv'd by an Unanimous Vote, *To assist him with their Lives and Fortunes against the Earl of Argyle, and all other his Enemies whatsoever.*

Some few days after, the *Bill* for settling his *Revenue*, was presented to him for his *Assent*; upon which Occasion he

M

made



made them another *Memorable Speech*: He thank'd them for the Bill; told them of want of Stores in the Navy and Ordnance; of the Anticipations that were upon several Branches of the Revenue; of the Debts due to his Brother's Servants and Family; which he said were such as deserv'd compassion; and of the extraordinary charges he must be at in suppressing the Rebellion in Scotland: Upon all which accounts he demanded an extraordinary Supply; and summ'd up all, with recommending to them the Care of the Navy, which he was pleas'd to call *the Strength and Glory of the Nation*: And in the end told them, *He could not express his Concern upon that occasion more suitable to his own thoughts of it, than by assuring them, He had a true English Heart, as jealous of the Honour of the Nation, as Theirs could be. And that he pleas'd himself with the Hope, That by God's Blessing and the Parliament's Assistance, he might carry the Reputation of it higher in the World, than ever it had been in the time of any of his Ancestors.*

*Appendix.*  
Numb 12.  
p. 367.  
His Speech  
to the Par-  
liament.

It was no wonder that a Speech of this Strain, so becoming an *English Monarch*, did meet with a kind Reception from an *English Parliament*, and be answer'd, as it was,

was, with a large *Supply*; since a *Neighbouring Court* was thereupon at a stand what to think of a Prince they had reckon'd upon as their *own*, and of whose real Friendship this unexpected *Speech* gave them ground to doubt. They well knew, that a true *English Heart* was diametrically opposite to their Designs; and that a King jealous of the Honour of the *English Nation*, must needs be an Enemy to all Encroachments of any Neighbouring State. To plunge that Court yet the more into a Maze of Thoughts about King *James* upon this Occasion, the carrying the Reputation of England yet higher in the World than ever it had been in the time of any of his Ancestors, were Words that seem'd to promise no less than the imitating, or rather out-doing of an *Edward III.* or a *Henry V.* that had rais'd to themselves immortal *Trophies*, at the Expence of their Neighbours, and wrote their own *Panegyricks* with their Enemies Blood.

How this Speech was relish'd abroad, cannot be better express'd, than in Two Letters writ at that time by a certain Great Minister, to an *Ambassador* here, which being communicated to me by a Noble Person, into whose hands many of

that Ambassador's *Papers* happen'd to fall upon the late *Revolution*, they are plac'd at length in the *Appendix* in *English*.

*Appendix,*  
*Numb. 13.*  
*p. 369.*

In the first of these *Letters*, That Minister discovers a sort of diffidence in King *James*, as if he were not the Man they had taken him for. Expresses his Fears, that a *Cordial Agreement* between him and the *Parliament*, might unhinge all the Measures had been so long a concerting betwixt him and his Master, when King *James* was but *Duke of York*. He recommends to the Ambassador, to enquire narrowly into the *Motives* and the *Advisers* of this *Speech* to the *Parliament*, as the most considerable Service that could be done in that juncture.

The other *Letter* chides the Ambassador, for not being yet able to sound King *James's Intentions*; and tells him, They had receiv'd from a sure hand better News than what it appears the Ambassador had writ. And which is most remarkable in the whole Letter, there is in it a plain Insinuation, That there was in that Court some great matter under consideration, concerning the *Edict* of *Nants*, which was not to be declar'd until King *James's Intentions* were fully known. And concludes with a Command to the Ambassador, to sift out  
how

how King James stood affected to the Prince of Orange.

What discoveries were made in obedience to these *Letters*, can be no otherwise guess'd at but by the *Event*; for at this very time the Unfortunate *Duke of Monmouth* by a desperate, ill tim'd Attempt to overturn King *James's* Throne, did all that in him lay, to fix it the faster.

King *Charles*, as I have said, lov'd *Monmouth* tenderly; and all the Disgraces and Hardships that had of late Years been put upon him, were rather the effects of Fear and Policy, than Inclination or Choice. He was fond of him to that degree, that though he was the greatest Master in the Art of Dissimulation, yet he could not refrain sometimes in Company where he might be free, from regretting his own hard Fortune; which necessitated him to frown upon a Son, whose greatest Crime was to have incurr'd his Brother's Displeasure.

His Fondness was yet more express'd in his Behaviour to the *Duke of Monmouth*, upon the Discovery of that which was call'd the *Protestant Plot*, and in the manner he brought him back to Court, after the Ferment was a little abated. All



the time *Monmouth* was absconding, and when there was a *Proclamation* out for apprehending him, King *Charles* not only knew where he was, and sent him Messengers every day, but saw him several times in private. When the *Duke's* Anger was a little appeas'd by the Sacrifices that were offer'd up to it, King *Charles* thought it was then time to have his *Son* once again about him. In order to which, he so manag'd the matter, that *Monmouth* should owe the Favour to the *Duke of York*, and that his Pardon should be granted merely at the *Duke's* Intercession.

The Night he appear'd first at Court upon his Reconciliation, King *Charles* was so little Master of himself, that he could not dissemble a mighty Joy in his Countenance, and in every thing he did or said: Infomuch, that it was the publick Talk about Town, and strongly insinuated to the *Duke of York*, That all the King's former Proceedings against the *Duke of Monmouth*, were but *Grimace*, and that his Royal Highness being made the Instrument of the Reconciliation, was all but a Trick put upon him. This so far incens'd the Duke, that he never rested till King *Charles* was prevail'd with

to demand of *Monmouth* the Publication of a Paper which he had sign'd under Trust, and with an Assurance given him that it should never be made Publick; which the Party about the *Duke* knew *Monmouth* would not consent to, as being against his Honour. They were not mistaken, for *Monmouth* refus'd it; and upon his Refusal was disgrac'd once again.

King *Charles's* Kindness ended not here, but attended him to *Holland*, whither he was oblig'd to retire. He found secret means to furnish him with Money, and sent him Messages from time to time, and sometimes writ to him with his own Hand. He could not bear any hard thing to be said of him in his absence; and some officious *Courtiers* found to their Cost, that it was not the way to make their Fortune, to aggravate *Monmouth's* Crimes: Nor did the King take any thing more kindly, than the Noble Reception *Monmouth* receiv'd from a Prince of his Blood in a Foreign Countrey, when he was forc'd to abandon his own.

King *Charles*, tir'd out at last with the uncontroll'd Hardships that were every day put upon him by the *Duke's* Creatures, and asham'd to see his own Lustre obscur'd, and his Power lessen'd

by a Party that had rais'd themselves up on *Monmouth's* Ruin, he resolv'd to shift the Scene; and in order to *make himself easy for the rest of his Life*, as he express'd it, he determin'd to send away the *Duke of York*, and recall the *Duke of Monmouth*.

*April* was the time agreed on to put this Resolution in practice; but there is little left us, by which we can judge whether *Monmouth* was to be recall'd to Court by a Formal Invitation of the King's, or whether King *Charles's* usual Thread of Diffimulation was to be spun out to that length, that *Monmouth* was to Land with an *Arm'd Force*. The first seems more probable, if it were but for what he has writ himself in the *Pocket-Book*; which there will be occasion to mention hereafter. It's true, the last looks more of a piece with the rest of his Behaviour towards his *Brother* and *Son*, and more agreeable to his Natural Biass, which seldom inclin'd him to chuse the *High Road*, when there could possibly be found a *By-Path* to tread in.

But Death put a sudden stop to all King *Charles's* Designs and *Monmouth's* Hopes, and at the same time warded off a Blow that threaten'd the *Duke of York* so near. And *Monmouth* being just ready to rise higher

higher than ever, was left by all his good Stars, which set with that *Royal Sun* that gave them Birth and Heat.

I would not be mistaken here, as if I were of opinion that in this New *Turn* that was upon the Anvil immediately before the Death of King *Charles*, there was any Design of altering the *Succession*, or bringing *Monmouth* within the View of a *Crown*: The whole Course of King *Charles's* Actions does sufficiently contradict any such thought: And though *Monmouth* was afterwards prevail'd with by a headstrong Party about him, to assume the Title of King, yet it's next to a Certainty, that all that was originally aim'd at by King *Charles* and the Duke of *Monmouth*, was only to weaken the *Duke of York's* Faction, which was then become insupportable, by playing *Monmouth's* Party against it; which was consistent with the only fix'd *Maxim* of Government in that Reign, *That when any one Party grew too strong, to throw in the Royal Weight into the lightest Scale.*

*Monmouth* was sufficiently stunn'd with this unexpected Change in his Fortune, by the Death of King *Charles*: But his great Courage and vain Confidence in a Popular Affection and Assistance, bore him



him up against all Difficulties, and prompted him on to attempt by Force of Arms, what was never design'd him by King *Charles*.

With Three small Ships, and about an Hundred and fifty Men, the *Duke* landed in the *West* of *England*, the Parliament sitting. A Romantick kind of Invasion, and scarce parallel'd in History : Yet with this Handful of Men, and the common People that join'd him, without Arms, Provisions, Martial Discipline, Money, or any one Place of Strength to retire to, in case of Accidents, did this Brave Unfortunate Man bid fair for a Crown : And if his Ill Fate had not plac'd a *Battalion* of *Dumbarton's* Regiment in his way, he had in all probability surpriz'd the King's Army in their Camp, and perhaps at that single Blow decided the Fortune of *England* for once. Yet this Attempt may be said to have pav'd the Way for a Nobler Change in the Throne, by leaving King *James* at liberty through this Success to act without Controul, what at length tumbled him down.

*Monmouth* paid the Price of his Rebellion with his Blood: And King *James* in ordering him to be brought into his Presence

sence under the Sentence of Death, was pleas'd to make one Exception against a General Rule observ'd inviolably among Kings, *Never to allow a Criminal under the Sentence of Death, the sight of his Prince's Face, without a design to pardon him.*

There is nothing deliver'd concerning this Unfortunate Gentleman, but what I have unquestionable Grounds for, and which some Persons yet alive, of the First *Quality*, know to be true. But of the most things above mention'd, there is an infallible Proof extant under *Monmouth's* own Hand, in a little *Pocket-Book* which was taken with him, and deliver'd to King *James*; which by an Accident is needless to mention here, I had leave to copy, and did it in part. A great many dark Passages there are in it, and some clear enough, that shall be eternally buried for me: And perhaps it had been for King *James's* Honour to have committed them to the Flames, as *Julius Caesar* is said to have done upon a like occasion. All the use that shall be made of it, is only to give in the *Appendix* some few passages out of it, that refer to this Subject, and confirm what has been above related.

*Appendix,*  
Numb. 14.  
p. 373.

*Monmouth*

*Monmouth's*  
Character.

*Monmouth* seem'd to be born for a better Fate; for the first part of his Life was all Sunshine, though the rest was clouded. He was Brave, Generous, Affable, and extremely Handsome: Constant in his Friendships, just to his Word, and an utter Enemy to all sort of Cruelty. He was easy in his Nature, and fond of Popular Applause, which led him insensibly into all his Misfortunes: But what ever might be the hidden Designs of some *working Heads* he embark'd with, his own were Noble, and chiefly aim'd at the good of his Countrey, though he was mistaken in the means to attain it. Ambitious he was, but not to the degree of aspiring to the Crown, till after his Landing in the *West*; and even then, he was rather Passive than Active in assuming the Title of King. It was Importunity alone that prevail'd with him to make that Step; and he was inflexible, till it was told him, That the only way to provide against the Ruin of those that should come in to his Assistance, in case he fail'd in the Attempt, was to declare himself King; *that they might be shelter'd by the Statute made in the Reign of Henry VII. in favour of those that should obey a King de Facto.* Those that advis'd him, had dis-

different Ends in it: Some to render the Breach betwixt King *James* and him irreconcilable, and thereby pave a way for a Commonwealth, in playing them against one another, Others to prevent a possibility of his being reconcil'd to King *James*, by the merit of delivering up those that should join him; which was a Thought unworthy of that nice Sincerity he had shewn in all the former Conduct of his Life.

To confirm this, I remember to have heard *Rumbold* say openly at his Execution in *Scotland*, upon the account of *Argyle's* Invasion, *That Monmouth had broke his Word with them, in declaring himself King.* And I have reason to know, that he was so far from a Design upon the Crown before he left *Holland*, that it was not without great Difficulty he was persuaded to come over at all: And that upon King *Charles's* Death he express'd a firm Resolution to make no such Attempt, but to live a retir'd Life, without giving King *James* any disturbance.

In his latter Years he us'd to complain of the little Care had been taken of his Education; and in his Disgrace endeavour'd to make up that Want, by applying himself to Study, in which he made  
in



in a short time no inconsiderable Progress. He took the occasion of his Afflictions to inform his Mind, and recollect and amend the Errors of Youth; which it was not strange he should be tainted with, being bred up in all the Pleasures of a Luxurious Court. What sedate Thoughts his Retirement brought him to, and, which is in a great part hitherto a Secret, how little Inclination he had to *make a Bustle in the World* (to give it in his own Words) is best express'd in a Letter of his own, to one that afterwards lost his Life in his Quarrel: which though without a Date, appears to be writ after King *Charles's* Death, and is plac'd in the *Appendix*; which was deliver'd me by a Gentlemen yet alive, that was intrusted with the Key of that and other Letters that were writ at that time: Which rather than discover, he chose to submit himself to be thrice cruelly tortur'd; all which he bore with a Courage worthy of the *Ancient Romans*.

*Appendix,*  
Numb. 15.  
P. 377.

Mr. *Spence*,  
Secretary  
to the late  
Earl of  
*Argyle*.

The Duke of *Monmouth*, when he was brought Prisoner to King *James's* Presence, made the humblest Submissions for his Life; and it's a Mystery what could move King *James* to see him, when he had no mind to pardon him. But the Manner

Manner of his Death Three Days after, did more than acquit him of any Meanness of Spirit in desiring to live, since he died with the greatest Constancy and Tranquility of Mind, and such as became a *Christian*, a *Philosopher*, and a *Soldier*.

The *Storm* being thus blown over that threaten'd his Crown, King *James* thought it time to cast off the Mask, and to act without disguise what till then he had in some part endeavour'd to dissemble. This Parliament had express'd a more than ordinary Zeal in *Attainting Monmouth*, and had readily granted him a competent supply to suppress that *Rebellion*. Not only so, but to testify the Confidence they had in his Promises mention'd in the former Speeches, the House of Commons Pass'd a Vote, *nemine contradicente*, That they did acquiesce, and entirely rely and rest wholly satisfied on His Majesty's Gracious Word, and repeated declarations to support and defend the Religion of the Church of England as it is now by Law Establish'd, which was dearer to them than their Lives. So that they had reason to expect some suitable Returns to all this Kindness and Confidence on their sides. But they  
were

were mistaken; for King *James* began to talk to them in a quite other strain than he had done before. And in another Speech from the Throne, gave them to understand by a plain Insinuation, That he was now Master, and that for the future they must expect to be govern'd, not by the known Laws of the Land, but by his own sole Will and Pleasure.

No part of the *English Constitution* was in it self more sacred, or better secur'd by Law, than That by which *Roman Catholics* were declar'd incapable of Places of Trust either Civil or Military in the Government: And he himself, when Duke of York was forc'd by the *Test-Act* to lay down his Office of Lord High-Admiral, even at a time when he had not publicly own'd his Reconciliation to the Church of *Rome*. But he did what lay in his Power to break down this Barrier, upon *Monmouth's* Defeat. And in a Speech to his Parliament, told them, That after the Storm that seem'd to be coming when he parted with them last, he was glad to meet them again in so great Peace and Quietness. But when he reflected what an inconsiderable number of Men began the late Rebellion, and how long they carry'd it on without any Opposition;

tion; He hop'd every body was convinc'd that the Militia was not sufficient for such Occasions; and that nothing but a good Force of Disciplin'd Troops was sufficient to defend Us from Insults at Home and Abroad: And therefore he had increas'd the number of Standing Forces to what they were: And demanded a Supply to support the Charge of them, which he did not doubt they would comply with. Then, as the main End of his Speech, and to let them know what he was positively resolv'd to do; He adds, *Let no Man take Exception that there are some Officers in the Army not qualified according to the late Test for their Employment: The Gentlemen I must tell you, are most of them well known to me; and having formerly serv'd me on several Occasions, and always approv'd the Loyalty of their Principles by their Practices, I think them now fit to be Employ'd under me; and will deal plainly with you, That after having had the benefit of their Services in such time of need and danger, I will neither expose them to Disgrace, nor my self to the Want of them, if there should be another Rebellion to make them necessary to me. And at last he tells them, That he was afraid some may hope that a difference might happen betwixt Him and*

N his

K. James's  
Speech to  
the Parlia-  
ment after  
Monmouth's  
defeat.  
Appendix,  
Numb. 16.  
P. 379.



*his Parliament on that occasion ; which he cannot apprehend can befall him, or that any thing can shake them in their Loyalty to him, who will ever make all returns of kindness and protection, and venture his Life in the Defence of the true Interest of the Nation.*

It was no wonder, That this Speech surpriz'd a People who valued themselves so much upon their *Liberties*, and thought themselves secure of them, both from the Constitution of their Government, and the solemn repeated promises of their Prince. They found too late, that their fears in the former Reign, of a *Popish Successor*, were too well grounded, and how inconsistent a *Roman Catholick King* is with a Protestant Kingdom. The Parliament did in humble manner represent the inconvenience that might attend such Measures, at least to render him inexcusable for what might Enſue. And that they might not be wanting to themselves and their Posterity, they Voted an *Address*, wherein they told him. *That they had with all duty and readiness taken into Consideration His Majesty's Gracious Speech. And as to that part of it relating to the Officers of the Army not qualified for their Employment according to the Act of Parlia-*  
ment,

The Par-  
liaments  
Address to  
K. James  
upon that  
Speech.

ment, they did out of their bounden duty humbly Represent to His Majesty, That these Officers could not by Law be capable of their Employments; and that the Incapacities they bring upon themselves that way, could no ways be taken off but by an Act of Parliament: Therefore out of that great Reverence and Duty they ow'd to His Majesty, they were preparing a Bill to indemnify them from the inconveniences they had now incur'd. And because the continuing them in their Employments may be taken to be a dispensing with Law without an Act of Parliament, the Consequence of which was of the greatest concern to the Rights of all his Subjects, and to all the Laws made for the Security of their Religion; Therefore they most humbly beseech His Majesty, That he would be graciously pleas'd to give such Directions therein, that no Apprehensions or Jealousies might remain in the hearts of his Subjects.

Over and above what was contain'd in this Address, the House of Commons were willing to capacitate by an Act of Parliament, such a Number of the Roman Catholick Officers, as King James should give a List of. But both this Offer and the Address were highly resented; and notwithstanding that they were prepa-

*his Parliament on that occasion ; which he cannot apprehend can befall him, or that any thing can shake them in their Loyalty to him, who will ever make all returns of kindness and protection, and venture his Life in the Defence of the true Interest of the Nation.*

The Par-  
liaments  
Address to  
K James  
upon that  
Speech.

It was no wonder, That this Speech surpriz'd a People who valued themselves so much upon their *Liberties*, and thought themselves secure of them, both from the Constitution of their Government, and the solemn repeated promises of their Prince. They found too late, that their fears in the former Reign, of a *Papish Successor*, were too well grounded, and how inconsistent a *Roman Catholick King* is with a Protestant Kingdom. The Parliament did in humble manner represent the inconvenience that might attend such Measures, at least to render him inexorable for what might Ensue. And that they might not be wanting to themselves and their Posterity, they Voted an *Address*, wherein they told him, *That they had with all duty and readiness taken into Consideration His Majesty's Gracious Speech. And as to that part of it relating to the Officers of the Army not qualified for their Employment according to the Act of Parlia-*  
ment,

ment, they did out of their bounden duty humbly Represent to His Majesty, That these Officers could not by Law be capable of their Employments; and that the Incapacities they bring upon themselves that way, could no ways be taken off but by an Act of Parliament: Therefore out of that great Reverence and Duty they ow'd to His Majesty, they were preparing a Bill to indemnify them from the inconveniences they had now incur'd. And because the continuing them in their Employments may be taken to be a dispensing with Law without an Act of Parliament, the Consequence of which was of the greatest concern to the Rights of all his Subjects, and to all the Laws made for the Security of their Religion; Therefore they most humbly beseech His Majesty, That he would be graciously pleas'd to give such Directions therein, that no Apprehensions or Jealousies might remain in the hearts of his Subjects.

Over and above what was contain'd in this Address, the House of Commons were willing to capacitate by an Act of Parliament, such a Number of the Roman Catholick Officers, as King James should give a List of. But both this Offer and the Address were highly resented; and notwithstanding that they were prepa-



ring a *Bill* for a considerable *Supply* to Answer his extraordinary Occasions, and had sent to the *Tower* one of their *Members* for speaking indecently of his Speech, King *James* was influenc'd to part with this his first and only *Parliament* in displeasure, upon the Fourth day after they presented the *Address*.

*Appendix,*  
Numb 17.  
P. 382

As his former *Speeches* to his *Council* and *Parliament* had put a *Foreign Court* to a Stand what to think of him; so this last put them out of pain, and convinc'd them he was entirely *Theirs*. Their sense of it can hardly be better express'd than in a *Letter* from Abroad contain'd in the *Appendix*; which by its *Stile*, though in another Hand, seems to be from the same Minister that writ the two former: In which he tells the *Ambassador* here, *That he needed not a surer Character of King James and his Intentions, than this last Speech to the Parliament, by which they were convinc'd of his former Resolution to throw off the Fetters which Hereticks would impose upon him, and to act for the time to come En Maître, as Master: A word till then altogether Foreign to the English Constitution.*

What other Effects this Speech had upon the Minds of People at Home and  
Abroad,

Abroad, may be easily guess'd from the different Interests they had in it: Nor is it to be pass'd over without some Remark, That the *Revocation of the Edict of Nantz*, which probably had been some time under Consideration before, was now put in Execution, to the Astonishment of all *Europe*.

The Parliament being dissolv'd; and no visible means left to retrieve the Liberties of *England*, King *James* made haste to accomplish the *Grand Design*, which a head-strong Party about him push'd on as the certain way in their opinion to Eternize his Name in this World, and to merit an Eternal Crown in the other. They foresaw that this was the *Critical Juncture*, and the only one that happen'd since the days of *Queen Mary*, to Restore their Religion in *England*. And if they were wanting to themselves in making use of it, the prospect of a *Protestant Successor* would infallibly prevent their having any such opportunity for the future. King *James* was pretty far advanc'd in years, and what was to be done, requir'd Expedition; for all their labour would be lost if he should die before the accomplishment. If he had been Younger, or the next presumptive Heir had not been

a Protestant, there had been no such absolute necessity for Dispatch: But the Uncertainty of the King's Life call'd for more than ordinary diligence in a Design that depended meerly upon it.

The *Party* being resolv'd for these Reasons to bring about in the Compass of one Single Life, and that already far spent, what seem'd to be the Work of a whole Age, they made large steps towards it. *Roman-Catholicks* were not only Employ'd in the *Army*, but brought into Places of greatest Trust in the *State*. The Earl of *Clarendon* was forthwith remov'd from the Office of *Privy-Seal*, and the Government of *Ireland*, to make room for the Earl of *Tyrconnel* in the one, and the Lord *Arundel* in the other. *Father Peters*, a *Jesuit*, was sworn of the *Privy-Council*. And though by the Laws it was High-Treason for any to assume the Character of the Pope's *Nuncio*; yet these were become too slender Cobwebs to hinder a *Roman Prelate* to appear publickly at *London* in that Quality; and one of the greatest Peers of *England* was disgrac'd for not paying him that Respect which the Laws of the Land made Criminal.

A Pope's  
Nuncio in  
England.

Duke of  
Somerset.

To

To bear the Publick Character of *Ambassador* to the *Pope*, was likewise an open Violation of the Laws: But so fond was the governing-Party about King *James* to shew their new-acquir'd Trophies at *Rome*, that the Earl of *Castlemain* was dispatch'd thither *Extraordinary Ambassador*, with a Magnificent Train, and a most Sumptuous Equipage. What his Secret *Instructions* were, may be partly guess'd by his Publick ones, which were, To *Reconcile the Kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland, to the Holy See, from which they had for more than an Age fallen off by Heresy.*

An Ambassador sent to Rome,

*Innocent XI.* receiv'd this *Embassy* as one that saw further than those who sent it. The Ambassador had but a cold Reception of the *Holy Father*; and none of the *Cardinals*, but those of a particular *Faction*, and the good natur'd *Cardinal of Norfolk*, took any further notice of it, than Good Manners oblig'd them. The *Court of Rome* were too refin'd Politicians to be impos'd upon with *Shew and Noise*; and knew the World too well, to expect great Matters from such hasty, ill-tim'd *Advances* as were made to them. Not only so, but *Innocent* having an Aversion in his Nature to a *Faction* he knew

And slighted by the Pope.



King *James* was embark'd in, which he never took pains to dissemble, was not overfond of an *Embassy* from a Prince who was in an *Interest* he had long wish'd to see humbled. King *James* met with nothing but Mortifications at *Rome* in the Person of his *Ambassador*, which occasion'd his making as short a Stay as was possible. In which may be seen the vast difference there was at that time betwixt the *Politicks* of *Italy*, and those of a headstrong Party in *England*. And however the World has been impos'd upon to believe that the *Pope's Nuncio* at the *English* Court, who is since made a *Cardinal*, was an Instrument to push on things to extremities; yet certain it is he had too much good sense to approve of all the Measures that were taken; and therefore desir'd often to be recall'd, lest he should be thought to have a hand in them.

Cardinal  
Dads.

\* Dr. Gee's  
Animad-  
version on  
the *Jesuits*  
*Memorial*  
for the In-  
tended Re-  
formation  
of *England*,  
under the  
first *Popish*  
Prince.  
*London*,  
1690.

Altho the Earl of *Castlemain* was pleas'd upon his Examination before the *Parliament*, to say, that his *Ambassy* to *Rome* was only such as is between Two *Temporal Princes*, about *Compliment* and *Commerce*; yet *Father Warner* in his *Manuscript History*, quoted by a Learned Author \*, gives us another account of it, in these words; *Things being thus settled* (says

(says he) *within the Realm; the next care his Majesty had, was to unite his Countries to the Obedience of the Bishop of Rome, and the Apostolick See, which had been cut off by Heresy about an Age and a half before. To try the Pope's Inclination, in the Year 1685. he sent Mr. Carryl thither, who succeeding according to his Wishes, and being recall'd, the Earl of Castlemain was sent the next Year, as Extraordinary Ambassador to the Pope, in the Name of the King and the Catholicks of England, to make their Submission to the Holy See.*

*Castlemain* had several *Audiences* of the Pope, but to little purpose; for whenever he began to talk of Business, the Pope was seasonably attack'd with a *Fit of Coughing*, which broke off the Ambassador's Discourse for that time, and oblig'd him to retire. These *Audiences* and *Fits of Coughing* continued from time to time, while *Castlemain* continued at *Rome*, and were the subject of diversion to all but a particular *Faction* at that Court. At length he was advis'd to come to Threats, and to give out that he would be gone, since he could not have an opportunity to treat with the Pope about the Business he came for. *Innocent* was  
so

so little concern'd for the Ambassador's Resentment, that when they told him of it, he answered with his ordinary Coldness, *E bene, se vuol andersene ditegli adonque che si levi di buon matino al fresco e che a mezzogiorno si repositi, per che in questi paesi non bisogna viaggiare al caldo del giorno.* Well! let him go; and tell him, *It were fit he rise early in the Morning, that he may rest himself at Noon; for in this Countrey it's dangerous to travell in the Heat of the Day.*

*Mercur  
Historique  
pour June,  
1687.*

In the end, he was recall'd; being able to obtain of the Pope two trifling Requests only, that could hardly be denied to an ordinary Courier; The one was a *License for the Marechal d'Humiers's Daughter to marry her Uncle*: And the other, a *Dispensation of the Statutes of the Jesuits Order, to Father Peters, to enjoy a Bishoprick*: The want of which, says my Author, was the reason that the *Archbishoprick of York* was kept so long vacant.

*The Jesu-  
its Noble  
Entertain-  
ment of  
the English  
Ambassa-  
dor at  
Rome.*

Though the Pope carried himself in this manner towards the *English Ambassador*, yet the *Jesuits* paid him the highest Respect imaginable; which did him no service with the *Old Man*, for *He* and  
That

That *Order* were never hearty *Friends*. They entertain'd him in their *Seminary* with the greatest *Magnificence*; and nothing was wanting in *Nature* or *Art* to grace his *Reception*. All their *Stores* of *Sculpture*, *Painting*, *Poetry*, and *Rhetorick*, seem to have been exhausted upon this *Entertainment*. And though all the *Inscriptions* and *Emblems* did center upon the *Triumph of the Romish Religion*, and the *Ruin of Heresy in England*; yet *Care* was taken not to omit such particular *Trophies* and *Devices*, as were adapted to their new-acquir'd *Liberty of setting up their Publick Schools at London*. Among a great many other *Panegyricks* upon *King James*, the following *Distich* was plac'd below an *Emblem of England*.

*Restituit Veterem tibi Religionis honorem,  
Anglia, Magnanimi Regis aperta fides.*

*The open Zeal of this Magnanimous King,  
has restor'd to England its Antient Religion.*

There was also this *Inscription* put round *King James's Picture*:

*Poten-*



## M E M O I R S, &amp;c.

*Potentissimo & Religiosissimo  
Magna Britanæ*

R E G I

J A C O B O II.

*Generosâ*

*Catholicæ Fidei Confessione*

*Regnum Auspicienti.*

E T

I N N O C E N T I O XI. P. M.

*Per Legatum*

*Nobilissimum & Sapientissimum*

*D. Rogerium Palmerium*

*Comitem de Castlemain*

*Obsequium deferenti.*

*Collegium Romanum*

*Regia Virtutum Insignia dedicat.*

*To the most Potent and most Religious  
JAMES the Second, King of Great  
Britain; beginning his Reign with the  
Generous Confession of the Catholick  
Faith.*

A N D

*Paying his Obedience to Pope*

I N N O C E N T XI.

*By the most Noble and most Wise  
Rôger Palmer, Earl of Castlemain,  
The Roman Colledge*

*Dedicates*

*These Royal Emblems of his Virtues.*

In

In the Great *Hall* the Ambassador was *Harangued* by the *Rector* of the *College* in a *Latin* Speech; which, to shew the vain Hopes they had of King *James* and their own Fortune at that time, is plac'd in the *Appendix*, with a Translation of it into *English*: Referring the Reader for the rest of that Solemnity, to an Ingenious Gentleman that was then upon the Place, and has given a particular Account of it.

*Appendix,*  
Numb. 18.

p. 383.

*Nouveau*  
*Voyage d'I-*  
*talie, Edit.*

3. Tom. 2.

*Par Mon-*  
*sieur Miffon.*

But yet it may not be amiss to mention what the same Gentleman tells us, of a *Device* that related to King *James's* having a Son; which was, *A Lilly, from whose Leaves there distill'd some Drops of Water*, which as the Naturalists say, becomes the Seed of new Lillies; and the *Motto* was, *Lachrimor in Prolem: I weep for Children*. Underneath was this Distich:

*Pro Natis, Jacobe, gemmis, Flos candidæ*  
*Regum?*

*Hos Natura Tibi si neget, Astra dabunt.*

*Dost thou sigh for Children, O James! thou*  
*best of Kings! If Nature denies, Hea-*  
*ven will grant them.*

There

There was one *Inscription* more this Author takes notice of, which being one of the most unaccountable things of that kind, afforded matter for the *Wits* of *Rome* to descant upon. Though the Words are ill chose, and strangely harsh, yet it's certain the Fathers had a good meaning in them; and they refer to King *James's* Influence upon his Brother to turn *Roman-Catholick* at his death. The *Inscription* runs thus,

Jacobo Secundo Angliæ Regi  
 Quod ipso Vita Exemplo preunte,  
 Et impellente Consiliis,  
 Carolus Frater & Rex  
 Mortem obierat admodum piam:  
 Regnaturus à tergo frater  
 Alas Carolo addidit;

E T

Ut Cælo dignum

E T

Dignum se Rege Legatum, eligeret,  
 Fratrem Misit.

To King James II. King of England;  
 for having by his Example and his Coun-  
 sel, prevail'd with Charles his Brother  
 to dye a Pious Death. /

And

*And being to succeed him,  
He gave Wings to Charles; and that he  
might make choice of an Ambassador  
worthy of Heaven and himself, he sent  
his Brother.*

I will not pretend to give the nice Sense  
of these words; and tho I would, I cannot,  
there being such a perplexity in them.  
But for the Expressions that follow, I  
may venture to give them in *English*,  
though they seem to be as much out of the  
ordinary Road as the former.

*Nuncii ex Angliâ Proceres  
Retulerunt Regibus aliis Jacobum Regnan-*  
*Cælo (tem.)*

*Primus omnium retulit Carolus.*

*Nec Immerito;*

*Reges alii Legatos suscipiunt*

*Mittuntque Principes,*

*Legatos Reges Deum Excipere decuit;*

*Jacobum mittere.*

English Noblemen were sent to other Kings,  
to acquaint them with King James's  
Accession to the Crown: But Charles  
first of all, brought the News of it to  
Heaven.

*It*



*It was but reasonable,  
For Kings to send and receive Princes as  
Ambassadors :*

*But*

*It became God Almighty to receive, and  
James to send no Ambassadors but Kings.*

The Mor-  
tifications  
K. James  
met with  
at Rome,  
about his  
Marriage  
with the  
Princess  
of Eſſe.

Genealo-  
gies of the  
Family of  
Mordant,  
&c. in a  
large Fol.  
P. 427,  
428.

To see King James neglected at Rome in the Pontificat of Innocent XI. was not so strange, considering what has been said of his Antipathy to a *Faction* wherein that Prince was concern'd : But that in the time of Innocent's Predecessor, and when he was Duke of York, he should be denied a common Favour, which that Court seldom or never refuses to any one, was a thing altogether unaccountable : Yet so it was, That he having sent the late Earl of Peterborough to Italy, to Espouse the Princess of Modena in his Name, all the Interest he could make, was not able to obtain a *Dispensation* for the Marriage. The account of this matter being so little known, and that Earl's Book wherein he mentions it, being so rare, and as I am told, but Twenty four Copies printed, I shall give it in the Earl's own Words :

“ But

“ But now from *Rome* there was Ad-  
 “ vice (says he) by the *Abbot of Angeo*,  
 “ of the great Difficulties that arose in  
 “ the Consultations of this Affair (mean-  
 “ ing the Marriage.) The *French Am-*  
 “ bassador, the *Duke d’Estrees*, favour’d  
 “ the Marriage with all the Power of the  
 “ *French Faction*; so did *Cardinal Barbe-*  
 “ *rini*, and all the other Friends and Al-  
 “ lies of the House of *Estè*. But his *Ho-*  
 “ *lines* himself was very averse, and  
 “ *Cardinal Altieri*, who was the *Govern-*  
 “ *ing Nephew*, a profess’d and violent  
 “ Opposer. The main pretence for this  
 “ Obstinacy, was the *Duke of York*’s not  
 “ declaring himself publickly of the *Ro-*  
 “ *mish Church*, though they knew that he  
 “ was of a long time reconcil’d to it.

“ But now at last (continues the Earl  
 “ of *Peterborough*) came from *Rome* the  
 “ *Abbot of Angeo* without the Dispensati-  
 “ tion, which he could by no means ob-  
 “ tain, by reason that *Cardinal Altieri*  
 “ was inflexible, and Threats of Excom-  
 “ munication were issued out against any  
 “ that should undertake to perform or  
 “ celebrate the Marriage. Whereupon  
 “ we were all upon the fears and expecta-  
 “ tions of a total Rupture. The *Dutchess*  
 “ of *Modena* her self, a Zealous, if not a  
 O “ Bigot

“ Bigot Woman, was in great pain about  
 “ the part that might seem offensive to  
 “ his *Holiness*, or neglective of his Au-  
 “ thority: And the Young *Princess* took  
 “ occasion from hence to support her  
 “ unwillingness. But in truth, Cardinal  
 “ *Barberini*, upon whom the *Dutchess* had  
 “ great dependance, and all the other  
 “ Adherents and Relations of the House  
 “ of *Esté*, being every day more and  
 “ more possess’d of the Honour and In-  
 “ terest they were like to find in this Alli-  
 “ ance, were scandaliz’d at the unreason-  
 “ able Obstinacy of the *Pope* and his  
 “ *Nephew*; and did frankly advise the  
 “ *Dutchess* of *Modena* suddenly to make  
 “ up and perfect the Marriage: The  
 “ Peace and Excuse of the thing being  
 “ easier to be had after it was done, than  
 “ any present *License* to be obtain’d for  
 “ doing it.

“ The Bishop of *Modena* was then ap-  
 “ plied to (adds the *Earl*) for the Per-  
 “ formance: But he refusing, a poor  
 “ *English Jacobine* was found, Brother to  
 “ *Jerome White*, that after serv’d the  
 “ *Dutchess*, who having nothing to lose,  
 “ and on whom the Terror of *Excommu-*  
 “ *nication* did not so much prevail, did  
 “ undertake it, and so he perform’d the  
 “ Cere-

“Ceremony. Thus far the *Earl of Peterborough*.

But to leave this Digression, and to return to our History. It was about this time that the *Romish Cabal* about King *James* began to play their *Popular Engine*, and which was likely to do most Execution, by weakning the *National Establish'd Church*, and dividing *Protestants* among themselves, when in the mean time the *Roman Catholicks* were to be the only Gainers. This was disguis'd under the specious Names of *Liberty of Conscience*. And the very same Party that advis'd this *Toleration*, were they that had push'd on all the Severities against the *Protestant Dissenters* in the former Reign, with design to widen the Breach between them and the Church of *England*, and to render the first more willing to swallow the Bait of *Toleration*, whenever it should be offer'd to them. They gain'd in a great part their End; for the *Dissenters* were not so fond of Persecution and Ill Usage; as to refuse a Liberty that was frankly offer'd them, which neither their Prayers; nor Tears could obtain before: Nor did they think it good manners to enquire too narrowly how that Liberty came

The true design of the Persecution of Dissenters in King *Charles's* time.



about, as long as they were shelter'd thereby from the Oppressions they lay under.

The Church of *England* saw through all this *Contrivance*, and fear'd the Consequences. The *Protestant Dissenters* were more pitied now in their seeming Prosperity, than ever they had been in their real Adversity. Some that had been zealous before in putting the *Penal Laws* in Execution against them, did now see their Error too late, and found they had been us'd but as Tools to prevent the *Dissenters* from uniting with the Church of *England*, whenever the common Danger should come to threaten both.

K. James  
grants a  
Tolerati-  
on of Re-  
ligion.

This *Toleration* could not subsist, being contrary to the Establish'd Laws of the Realm, unless a new *Monster* was introduc'd to give it life, under the Name of a *Dispensing Power*. When King *James* came to assume to himself this *Power* as his Prerogative and Right, he unhindg'd the *Constitution* all at once; for to dispense with Laws already made, is as much a part of the *Legislature*, as the making of new ones. And therefore in arrogating to himself such a *Dispensing Power*, he invaded the very *Essence* of the *English* Constitution, by which the *Legislature*

*gislature is lodg'd in King, Lords and Commons; and every one of them has a Negative upon the other two.*

Charles II. was the first King of *England* that ever aim'd at any thing like a Dispensing Power. In the Year 1662. he was prevail'd upon for some Reasons of State to issue out a Proclamation, dispensing with some few things that related to the *Act of Uniformity*, but without the least regard to *Roman Catholicks*. And though in his Speech to the Parliament upon that occasion, he did in a manner acknowledge that he had no such Power, in saying, *That if the Dissenters would demean themselves peaceably and modestly, he could heartily wish he had such a Power of Indulgence to use upon occasion.* Yet the Parliament was so jealous of this Innovation, that they presented the King with an *Address* against the *Proclamation*; and plainly told him, *That he had no Power to dispense with the Laws without an Act of Parliament.*

King *Charles* made another Attempt of the like nature, in the Year 1672; and in a Speech to Both Houses, did mention his Declaration of Indulgence, and acquainted them with the Reasons that induc'd him to it; telling them withal,

how little the *Roman Catholicks* would be the better for it. Upon which the House of Commons made an Address to him for recalling this Declaration: Wherein they plainly told him, *That in claiming a Power to dispense with Penal Laws, his Majesty had been very much misinform'd; since no such Power was ever claim'd or exercis'd by any of his Predecessors; and if it should be admitted, might tend to the interrupting of the free course of the Laws, and altering the Legislative Power, which has always been acknowledg'd to reside in his Majesty; and his Two Houses of Parliament.* King Charles was so far satisfied in the matter contain'd in this Address, that he immediately thereupon cancell'd his Declaration of Indulgence, and order'd the Seal to be torn off; and acquainted both Houses, That he had done so; with this further Declaration, which was enter'd upon Record in the House of Lords, *That it should never be drawn into Example or Consequence.*

The next that attempted such a Dispensing Power, though of a far larger Extent, was King *James*, as has been said: And how any thing that look'd that way was relish'd by the House of Commons, does appear by their Address  
against

againſt the *Roman Catholick Officers*; which alſo has been mention'd.

It was not enough for King *James* to aſſume this *Dispensing Power*, and to act by it; but ſuch was the Miſery and hard Fate of *England*, that the *Party* about the King would have had us believe, *That a Power in the King to diſpenſe with Laws, was Law.* To maintain this *Monſtrous Poſition*, there were not only Mercenary Pens ſet a-work, but a Set of Judges found out, that to their Eternal Reproach, did all was poſſible for them to compliment the King with the Liberties of their Countrey. For theſe Gentlemen gave it for Law,

And aſſumes a diſpenſing Power.

*That the Kings of England are Sovereign Princes.*

*That the Laws of England are the King's Laws.*

*That therefore it's an incident inſeparable Prerogative in the Kings of England, as in all other Sovereign Princes, to diſpenſe with Penal Laws, in particular Caſes, and upon particular neceſſary Reaſons.*

*That of thoſe Reaſons and thoſe Neceſſities the King himſelf is the ſole Judge.* And then, which is conſequent upon all,

*That this is not a Truſt inveſted in, or granted to the King by the people, but is the Antient*



*Remain of the Sovereign Power and Prerogative of the Kings of England, which never yet was taken from them, nor can be.*

Thus were we fallen under the greatest Misfortune that could possibly happen to a Nation, *To have our Laws and Constitution trampled upon under colour of Law.* And those very Men, whose Office it was to support them, became now the Betrayers of them to the Will of the Prince.

This mighty Point being gain'd, or rather forc'd upon us, the *Roman Catholics* were not wanting to make the best use of it for themselves. The free and open Exercise of their Religion was set up every where, and *Jesuit Schools* and *Seminaries* erected in the most considerable Towns. The Church of *England* had now but a *precarious Title* to the *National Church*, and *Romish Candidates* had swallow'd up its *Preferments* and *Dignities* already in their Hopes. *Romish Bishops* were publickly *Consecrated* in the *Royal Chappel*, and dispatch'd down to exercise their *Episcopal Function* in their respective *Diocesses*. Their *Pastoral Letters*, directed to the *Lay Catholics* of *England*, were openly dispers'd up and down,

down, and printed by the King's own Printer, with Publick License. The *Regular* Clergy appear'd in their Habits in *Whitehall* and *St. James's*; and made no scruple to tell the Protestants, *They hop'd in a little time to walk in Procession through Cheapside.*

A mighty Harvest of *New Converts* was expected; and that Labourers might not be wanting, Shoals of *Priests* and *Regulars* were sent over from beyond Sea to reap it. The only Step to Preferment, was to be of the King's Religion: And to preach against the Errors of *Rome*, was the height of Disloyalty, because forsooth, it tended to alienate the Subjects Affections from the King. An Order was directed to the Protestant Bishops about *Preaching*, which was, upon the matter, forbidding them to defend their Religion in the Pulpit, when it was at the same time attack'd by the *Romish* Priests with all the Vigour they were capable of, both in their Sermons and Books. This Order was taken from a Precedent in Queen *Mary's* time; for the first Step she made to introduce Popery, notwithstanding her Promises to the Gentlemen of *Suffolk* and *Norfolk* to the contrary, upon their appearing first of any  
for .

for her Interest, upon the Death of her Brother, was to issue out a Proclamation, forbidding the Preaching upon controverted Points of Religion, for fear, it was said, of raising Animosities among the people. But notwithstanding this insnaring Letter of K. *James's*, the Clergy of the Church of *England* were not wanting in their Duty: For to their Immortal Honour, they did more to vindicate the Doctrine of their own Church, and expose the Errors of the Church of *Rome* both in their *Sermons* and *Writings*, than ever had been done either at Home or Abroad, since the *Reformation*; and in such a Stile, and with such an Inimitable Force of Reasoning, as will be a Standard of Writing to succeeding Ages.

To hasten on the Project against the *Establisht Church*, a new Court of *Inquisition* was erected, under the Name of a *Commission for Ecclesiastical Affairs*: And to blind the People, there were some Bishops of the Church of *England* nam'd *Commissioners*, whereof one refus'd to act from the beginning, and the other excus'd himself, after he came to see where the Design of it was levell'd. This *Commission* was another manifest Violation of the Laws, and against an  
ex-

express *Act* of Parliament: And as if that had not been enough to mortify the Church of *England*, there were some *Roman-Catholicks* appointed *Commissioners*, and consequently the Enemies of the Protestant Religion were become the Judges and Directors of a Protestant Church in its *Doctrine* and *Discipline*.

These Commissioners thought fit to begin the Exercise of their New Power with the Suspension of Dr. *Compton*, Bishop of *London*. This Noble Prelate, by a Conduct worthy of his Birth, and Station in the Church, had acquir'd the Love and Esteem of all the Protestant Churches at home and abroad, and was for that reason the Mark of the Envy and Hatred of the *Romish* Party at Court. They had waited for an occasion to enoble their *Ecclesiastical Commission* with such an Illustrious Sacrifice; and such an occasion was rather taken than given, in the Business of Dr. *Sharp*, now Archbishop of *York*.

The Suspension of the Bishop of *London*.

The Priests about the King knowing how much it was their Interest that the Protestant Clergy should not have leave to refute the Errors of the Church of *Rome* in their Sermons, had advis'd him to send to the Bishops the ensnaring Letter

The occasion of it.

ter



ter or *Order* before mention'd, containing *Directions about Preachers*. The Learned Dr. *Sharp* taking occasion in some of his Sermons to vindicate the Doctrine of the Church of *England*, in opposition to Popery; this was in the *Court-Dialect* understood to be the endeavouring to beget in the minds of his Hearers an all opinion of the King and his Government; by insinuating Fears and Jealousies, to dispose them to Discontent, and to lead them into Disobedience and Rebellion; and consequently, a Contempt of the said *Order* about *Preachers*. Whereupon King *James* sent a Letter to the Bishop of *London*, containing an *Order* to suspend Dr. *Sharp* from Preaching in any Parish Church or Chapel in his Diocese, until the Doctor had given Satisfaction, and his Majesty's further Pleasure should be known.

The Bishop of *London* perceiving what was aim'd at in this Letter, endeavour'd all that was possible to divert the Storm that threaten'd him, and the Church of *England* through his sides. He writ a Submissive Letter to the Secretary of State, to be communicated to the King; setting forth, *That he thought it his Duty to obey his Majesty in whatever Commands he laid upon him, that he could perform with a safe*

a safe Conscience: But in this he was oblig'd to proceed according to Law, and as a Judge: And by the Law no Judge condemns a man, before he has knowledge of the Cause, and has cited the Party. That however, he had acquainted Dr. Sharp with his Majesty's Displeasure; whom he found so ready to give all reasonable Satisfaction, that he had made him the Bearer of that Letter.

Together with this Letter from the Bishop of London, Dr. Sharp carried with him a Petition to the King in his own Name, shewing, That ever since his Majesty was pleas'd to give notice of his Displeasure against him, he had forborn the Publick Exercise of his Function: And as he had endeavour'd to do the best Service he could to his Majesty and his late Brother in his Station, so he had not vented now in the Pulpit any thing tending to Faction or Schism: And therefore prayed his Majesty would be pleas'd to lay aside his Displeasure conceiv'd against him, and restore him to that Favour which the rest of the Clergy enjoy'd.

All this Submission was to no purpose. Nothing would satisfy the Party, but a Revenge upon the Bishop of London, for his Exemplary Zeal for the Protestant Interest;

Interest; and this Affair of Dr. *Sharp's* was made use of as a handle to mortify him, and in his Person the whole *Body* of the *Clergy*. The Bishop was Cited before the *Ecclesiastical Commission*, for not *suspending* Dr. *Sharp*, according to the King's *Order*, and treated by their *Chairman* at his Appearance, in a manner unworthy of his Station and Quality. All the Defence he could make, and his *Plea* to the Jurisdiction and Legality of the Court, which was good beyond all contradiction, did signify nothing. These New *Inquisitors* being resolv'd to stick at nothing that might please the *Party* that set them at work, did by their Definitive Sentence declare, decree, and pronounce, *That the Bishop of London should for his Disobedience and Contempt be suspended during his Majesty's Pleasure: And accordingly was suspended; with a peremptory Admonition, To abstain from the Function and Execution of his Episcopal Office, and other Ecclesiastical Jurisdictions, during the said suspension, under the pain of Deprivation, and Removal from his Bishoprick.*

The Proceedings  
against  
the President  
and  
Fellows of  
Magdalene  
Colledge.

The next that felt the weight of this *Ecclesiastical Commission*, were the *President* and *Fellows* of *St. Mary Magdalen's Colledge* in *Oxford*. The two chief *Seats* of

of Learning, the Universities of *Oxford* and *Cambridge*, stood in the way of the *Grand Design*; and the *Party* was impatient to get footing there. *Magdalen Colledge* is one of the Noblest Foundations that perhaps was ever erected to Learning in the World, and therefore it was no wonder it was one of the first Marks that was shot at. This Illustrious *Society* from repeated *Grants* of Kings, ratified in Parliament, and from their own *Statutes*, was in an uninterrupted Possession of a Right to *Elect* their own *President*. That Place being vacant by the Death of *Dr. Clark*, a Day was appointed by the *Vice-President* and *Fellows*, to proceed to the *Election* of another to fill up the Vacancy. But before the day of Election came, *Charnock*, one of the *Fellows* (who was since executed for the late *Plot* to *Assassinate* his present Majesty) brought them a *Mandate* from King *James*, to elect one *Farmer* into the Place; a Man of an ill Reputation, who had promis'd to declare himself *Roman-Catholick*, and was altogether incapable of the Office by the *Statutes* of the College. This *Mandate* the *Vice-President* and *Fellows* receiv'd with all decent Respect, and sent their humble *Address* to the King, representing  
to



to his Majesty, *That Farmer was a Person in several respects incapable of that Office, according to their Founder's Statutes: And therefore did earnestly beseech his Majesty, either to leave them to the discharge of their Duty and Consciences, according to his Majesty's late Gracious Declaration, and their Founder's Statutes; or else to recommend to them such a Person, who might be more serviceable to his Majesty and the College.*

Notwithstanding this humble and submissive *Address*, King James signified his Pleasure to them, *That he expected to be obey'd.* Upon which, the *Fellows* being oblig'd by the *Statutes* of their *Society*, to which they were sworn, not to delay the *Election* longer than such a day, and *Farmer* being a Person they could not chuse, without incurring the Sin of *Perjury*, they proceeded to *Election*, and chose Dr. *Hough* (now Bishop of *Litchfield* and *Coventry*) their *President*.

Hereupon the New *President* and *Fellows* were cited before the *Ecclesiastical Commission*, for disobeying the King's *Mandate*. And notwithstanding they made it appear by their *Answer*, plac'd at length in the *Appendix*, *That they could not comply with that Mandate, without Breach of their Oath;*

Oath; and that there was no room left for the King to dispense with that Oath, because in the Oath it self they were sworn not to make use of any such Dispensation, nor in any sort consent thereto: Yet against all Law, the Ecclesiastical Commissioners did by their Sentence deprive Dr. Hough of his Presidentship, and suspended two of the Fellows from their Fellowships: While the King at the same time Inhibited the College to elect or admit any person whatsoever into any Fellowship, or any other Place or Office in the said College, till his further Pleasure.

The Court finding by this time, that Farmer was one of so profligate a Life, that though he had promis'd to declare himself Roman Catholick upon his promotion to that Place, they began to be asham'd of him: And therefore instead of insisting on the former *Mandamus* in his favour, there was another granted in favour of Dr. Parker, then Bishop of Oxford, one of the Creatures of the Court, and who they knew would stick at nothing to serve a Turn.

The Place of *President* being already in a legal manner fill'd up by the Election of Dr. Hough; which though it had not been, yet the Bishop of Oxford was like-

Appendix,  
Numb. 20.  
pag. 393.

wife incapable by the *Statutes* of the College, of being elected; The *Fellows* did humbly offer a very pathetick *Petition* to his Majesty, mention'd at length in the *Appendix*; in which they set forth, *how inexpressible an affliction it was to them to find themselves reduc'd to such an extremity, that either they must disobey his Majesty's Commands, contrary to their Inclinations, and that constant course of Loyalty which they had ever shew'd hitherto upon all occasions; or else break their Founder's Statutes, and deliberately perjure themselves.* Then they mention'd the *Statutes* and the *Oaths* that every one of them had taken at their Admission into their *Fellowships*; and concluded with an humble Prayer to his Majesty, To give them leave to lay their Case and Themselves at his Majesty's Royal Feet, earnestly beseeching his Sacred Majesty to extend to them, his humble Petitioners, that Grace and Tenderness which he had vouchsaf'd to all his other Subjects.

All this Submission was in vain: For the Ecclesiastical Commissioners by their final Decree and Sentence, depriv'd and expell'd from their Fellowships all the Fellows of Magdalen College, but Three that had complied with Breach of Oath, being Twenty  
five

*five in number.* And to push their Injustice yet further, they did by another Sentence decree and declare, *That Dr. Hough, who had been depriv'd before, and the said Twenty five Fellows, should be incapable of receiving, or being admitted into any Ecclesiastical Dignity, Benefice, or Promotion. And such of them who were not yet in Holy Orders, they adjudg'd incapable of receiving or being admitted into the same.* Thus by a Decree of an Illegal Court, were a Set of Worthy and Learned Men turn'd out of their *Freeholds*, merely for not obeying an Arbitrary Command, which was directly against their Consciences: And thus was King *James* prevail'd with by a Headstrong Party, to assume a Power not only to dispense with *Laws*, but to make void *Oaths*.

The first Declaration for Liberty of Conscience was not thought a sufficient Stretch of Power; and therefore King *James* issued out another of a much higher Strain, in which the *Roman Catholicks* were chiefly included, and indeed it was for their sake alone it was granted. To render the Church of *England* accessary to their own Ruin, there was an Order of Council made upon the latter, commanding it to be read at the usual times of Divine

The Second Declaration for Liberty of Conscience.

The Order of Council upon it.



*Service, in all Churches and Chappels throughout the Kingdom; and ordering the Bishops to cause it to be sent and distributed throughout their several and respective Diocesses, to be read accordingly.*

The Clergy of the Church of *England* had reason to take it for the greatest Hardship and Oppression that could be put upon them, to be commanded to read from their Pulpits a *Declaration* they knew to be against Law, and which in its Nature and Design was levell'd against their own Interest, and that of their Religion. Some of them through *Fear* or *Mistake*, and others *to make their Court*, complied; but the Generality refus'd to obey so unjust a Command. The *Romish* Party had their Ends in it, for their Refusal laid them open to the severe Lashes of the *Ecclesiastical Commission*; and accordingly, every one that had not read the *Declaration* in their Churches, were order'd to be prosecuted before that inexorable *Tribunal*, where they were infallibly to expect to be depriv'd: And so most of the *Benefices* in *England* must have been made vacant for a new kind of *Incumbents*.

But the *Scene* chang'd before all this could be brought about: For King *James*, urg'd

urg'd on by his Fate, and by a restless Party about him, came at this time to level a Blow against the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Six of his *Suffragan Bishops*, that awaken'd the People of *England* to shake off their Chains, and implore Foreign Assistance to retrieve the *dying Liberties* of their Countrey.

These *Seven Bishops* being sensible, as most of the Nation was, of what was originally aim'd at in these two *Declarations* for *Liberty of Conscience*, did consult together about the humblest manner to lay before King *James* the Reasons why they could not comply with the *Order of Council*. Having got leave to attend him, they deliver'd to him with the greatest Submission, a *Petition* in behalf of themselves, and their absent *Brethren*, and in the name of the *Clergy* of their respective *Diocesses*, humbly representing, That *their unwillingness did not proceed from any want of Duty and Obedience to his Majesty, nor from any want of due Tenderneſs to Dissenters; in relation to whom, they were willing to come to such a Temper as should be thought fit, when that Matter should be consider'd in Parliament and Convocation: But, among a great many other Considerations, from this especially,*

The Affair  
of the Se-  
ven Bi-  
shops.

*Because That Declaration was founded upon such a Dispensing Power as had been often declar'd illegal in Parliament ; and was a matter of so great moment and consequence to the whole Nation, that they could not in Prudence, Honour, or Conscience, so far make themselves Parties to it, as the distribution of it all over the Kingdom, and the solemn Publication of it even in God's House, and in the Time of his Divine Service, must amount to, in common and reasonable Construction. Therefore did humbly and earnestly beseech his Majesty, That he would be graciously pleas'd, not to insist upon their distributing and reading the said Declaration.*

*This Petition, tho the humblest that could be, and deliver'd by Six of them to the King alone in his Closet, was so highly resented, that the Six Bishops that presented it, and the Archbishop of Canterbury that writ it, but was not present at its delivery, were committed Prisoners to the Tower.*

*They were a few days after brought to the Kings Bench Bar, and Indicted of a High Misdemeanor, for having falsly, unlawfully, maliciously, seditiously, and scandalously fram'd, compos'd, and writ, a false, malicious, pernicious, and seditious Libel, concerning*

cerning the King and his Royal Declaration for Liberty of Conscience, under the pretence of a Petition: And that they had publish'd the same in presence of the King.

There was a great Appearance at this Tryal; and it was a *Leading Case*; for upon it depended in a great measure the Fate of the rest of the Clergy of the Church of *England*. It lasted long, and in the end the Seven Bishops were *Acquitted*, with the Acclamations of all but the *Court-Party*.

There were two things very remarkable in this Tryal: The *Dispensing Power* was learnedly and boldly argued against by the *Counsel* for the Bishops, and demonstrated by invincible Arguments to be an open Violation of the Laws and Constitution of the Kingdom. So that in one of the greatest Auditories that was ever seen in *Westminster Hall*, and upon hearing one of the most Solemn Causes that was ever Tried at the *Kings Bench Bar*, King James had the Mortification to see his *new assum'd Prerogative* baffled, and its Illegality expos'd to the World. The other thing observable upon this Tryal, was, That the Tables were so far turn'd, that some that had largely contributed to the Enslaving their Countrey



with false Notions of Law, were now of another Opinion: While at the same time, others that had stood up for the Liberty of their Country in two successive Parliaments, and had suffer'd upon that account, did now as much endeavour to stretch the Prerogative beyond its just Limits, as they had oppos'd it before. *So hard it is for Mankind to be in all times, and upon all turns constant to themselves.*

The News of the *Bishops* being acquitted, was receiv'd with the highest Expressions of Joy throughout the whole Kingdom: Nor could the King's own Presence prevent his *Army*, that was then encamp'd at *Hounslow Heath*, from mixing their loud Acclamations with the rest. This last *Mortification* might have prevented his Fate, if his Ears had been open to any but a Hot Party, that were positively resolv'd to push for all, cost what it would: And it was easily seen by the Soldiers Behaviour upon this occasion, *How impossible it is to debauch an English Army from their Love to their Countrey and their Religion.*

While the *Bishops* were in the Tower, the *Roman Catholicks* had their Hopes crown'd with the Birth of a pretended  
*Prince*

*Prince of Wales.* The fears of a *Protestant Successor*, had been the only Allay that render'd their Prosperity less perfect: Now the happiness of having an Heir to the Crown to be bred up in their own Religion, quash'd all those Fears, and aton'd for the uncertainty of the King's Life. It was so much their Interest to have one, and there was so many Circumstances that seem'd to render his Birth suspicious, that the Nation in general were inclinable to believe that this was the last *Effort* of the *Party*, to accomplish our Ruin.

The Birth of a pretended Prince of Wales.

All things seem'd now to conspire towards it. There was only a *Parliament* wanting, to ratify and approve all the Illegal Steps that had been made; which was to be done effectually *by taking off the Penal Laws and Test*, the two chief *Barriers* of our Religion. To obtain such a *Parliament*, no Stone was left unturn'd, and no Threats nor Promises neglected. *Regulators* were sent down to every *Corporation*, to model them to this end; though a great part of their Work had been done to their hand; for in most of the *New Charters* there had been such *Regulations* made, and such sort of Men put in, as was thought would make all sure.

A new Parliament design'd, and to what End.

But

Closetting  
in fashion.

But to be yet surer, and to try the Inclinations of People, *Closetting* came in to fashion, and King *James* was at pains to sound every man's mind, how far he might depend upon him for his concurrence with those Designs: If they did not readily promise to serve the King in *his own way*, which was the *distinguishing word* at that time, there was some Brand put upon them, and they were turn'd out of Place if they had any. Nor did King *James* think it below his Dignity, after the Priests had fail'd to bring in New *Converts*, to try himself how far his own Arguments might prevail; and he Closetted men for that purpose too. Some few of *no Principles*, and a great many others of *desperate Fortunes*, complimented him with their Religion, and were generally thereupon put into Employments: And so fond was the King of making *Proselites* at any rate, that there were of the *Scum* of the People that pretended to turn Papists merely for the sake of a Weekly small *Allowance*, which was regularly paid them.

It's a question after all, whether the Parliament which K. *James* was thus labouring to model, would have answer'd his Expectation, had they come to fit; for  
men's

men's eyes were open'd more and more every day ; and the Noble *Principles* of *English* Liberty began to kindle afresh in the Nation, notwithstanding all the endeavours had been us'd of a long time to extinguish them. Though the Dissenters, who might be chosen into Parliament upon this new Model, would probably have made Terms for themselves, to prevent their falling under any future Persecution ; yet being as averse to Popery as any others whatsoever, it is not to be imagin'd that they would upon that Consideration have unhindg'd the *Constitution* of *England*, to enable the *Roman Catholicks* to break in upon the Establish'd National Church, which in the end must have inevitably ruin'd both it and themselves.

But there fell out a little before this time an *Accident* that help'd mightily to buoy up the sinking Spirits of the Nation, and which was occasion'd by the forward Zeal of some about the King, contrary to their Intentions. While the Project was going on to take off the *Penal Laws* and *Test*, and the Protestants were in amaze what to expect, the good Genius of *England*, and King *James's* ill Fate, set him on to make a Tryal of the Inclinations of the *Prince* and *Princess* of  
Orange,



*Orange* in that matter. The Prince and Princess had look'd on with a silent Regret upon all the unlucky Steps that were making in *England*, and were unwilling to publish their Opinion of them, since they knew it could not but be displeasing to *K. James*. To know their *Highness's* mind in the business of the *Penal Laws* and *Test*, was a thing the most desir'd by the Protestants; but there was no possible way to come to this knowledge, if King *James* himself had not help'd them to it.

The  
Prince and  
Princess of  
*Orange's*  
Opinion  
about the  
Penal  
Laws and  
Test, de-  
clar'd in  
Pensiona-  
ry *Fagel's*  
Letter.

Mr. *Stuart*, since Sir *James Stuart*, had been pardon'd by King *James*, and receiv'd into Favour, after a long Banishment: He had been acquainted in *Holland* with the late Pensionary *Fagel*, and perswaded himself of a more than ordinary Friendship with that Wise Minister. The King foresaw it was his Interest to find out, some one way or other, the Prince and Princess's Thoughts of these matters; which if they agreed with his own, were to be made publick; if otherwise, were to be conceal'd: And Mr. *Stuart* took that Task upon himself. Pensionary *Fagel* was in a great Post in *Holland*, and in a near Intimacy with the *Prince*; one that was entirely trusted by him, and ever firm to his Interest.

terest. To know the *Pensionary's* Opinion was thought to be the same with knowing the *Prince's*, since it was to be suppos'd that he would not venture to write of any thing that concern'd *England*, especially such a nice Point as was then in question, without the *Prince's* Approbation at least, if not his positive Direction.

Upon these Considerations, and upon a Mistake that Mr. *Stuart* was in, about the Constitution of *Holland*, as if the *Roman-Catholicks* were not there excluded from Employments and Places of Trust, he writ a Letter to Pensionary *Fagel*. It's needless to give any account of the Letter it self, since *Fagel's* Answer, together with what has been already said, do give a sufficient Hint of the Design and Scope of it.

So averse were the *Prince* and *Princess* of *Orange* to meddle, and so unwilling to allow Pensionary *Fagel* to return to this Letter an Answer which they knew would not be pleasing, that Mr. *Stuart* writ by the King's Direction five or six more before it was thought fit to answer them. But at length their *Highnesses* were in a manner forc'd to it ; by the Reports that were industriously spread abroad in *England* by the Emissaries of  
the

the Court, as if the *Pensionary* in an Answer to Mr. *Stuart*, had acquainted him, That the Prince and Princess agreed with the King in the Design of taking off the *Penal Laws* and *Test*. This was not all; for the Marquess de *Albeville*, the *English Envoy* at the *Hague*, was put upon writing over to several persons, That the Prince of *Orange* had told him the very same thing; which Letter of *Albeville's* was likewise made publick. Such reports were enough to shake the Constancy of all those that design'd to stand firm to the Interests of the Establish'd Church in the ensuing Parliament, and to make them give all up for lost.

The Prince and Princess of *Orange* to do themselves Justice, and to disabuse a Nation they had so near an Interest in, directed *Pensionary Fagel* to write one Answer to all Mr. *Stuart's* Letters, to this purpose; That being desir'd by Mr. *Stuart* to let him know the Prince and Princess of *Orange's* Thoughts concerning the Repeal of the *Penal Laws*, and more particularly concerning the *Test*, he told him, That he would write without Reserve, since Mr. *Stuart* had said in his Letters, that they were writ by the King's Knowledge and Allowance. That it was the Prince and Princess's Opinion,

nion, That no Christian ought to be persecuted for his Conscience, or be ill us'd because he differs from the Publick and Establish'd Religion: And therefore, that they can consent, That the Papists in England, Scotland, and Ireland, be suffer'd to continue in their Religion, with as much Liberty as is allow'd them by the States of Holland; in which it cannot be denied but they enjoy a full Liberty of Conscience. And as to the Dissenters, their Highnesses did not only consent, but did heartily approve of their having an entire Liberty for the full Exercise of their Religion; and that their Highnesses were ready to concur to the settling and confirming this Liberty, and protect and defend it, and likewise confirm it with their Guarrantee, which Mr. Stuart had mention'd.

And if his Majesty (continues the Pensionary) desires their Concurrence in Repealing the Penal Laws, their Highnesses were ready to give it, provided these Laws remain still in their full force, by which the Roman-Catholicks are shut out of both Houses of Parliament, and out of all Publick Employments Ecclesiastical, Civil, and Military; as likewise those other Laws which confirm the Protestant Religion, and which secure it against all the Attempts of  
the



*the Roman Catholicks. But their Highnesses cannot agree to the Repeal of the Test, and those other Penal Laws last mention'd, that tend to the security of the Protestant Religion; since the Roman Catholicks receive no other Prejudices from these, than the being excluded from Parliament, and Publick Employments.*

*More than this (adds Pensionary Fagel) their Highnesses do think ought not be ask'd or expected; and they wondred how any that profess'd themselves Christians, and that may enjoy their Religion freely and without disturbance, can judge it lawful for them to disturb the Quiet of any Kingdom or State, or overturn Constitutions, that so they themselves may be admitted to Employments, and that these Laws in which the Security and Quiet of the Establish'd Religion consists, should be shaken. And as to what Mr. Stuart had writ, That the Roman-Catholicks in Holland were not shut out from Employments and Places of Trust, he tells him, He was grossly mistaken. The Pensionary concludes, That their Highnesses could not concur with his Majesty in these matters; for they believ'd they should have much to answer to God for, if the consideration of any present Advantage should carry them to consent to things which  
they*

*they believe would not only be dangerous, but mischievous to the Protestant Religion.*

Thus far Pensionary *Fagel*. And I would not have dwelt so long upon this Letter of his, if it were not for the Noble Scheme of a just *Liberty* in matters of Conscience, that's therein contain'd. Notwithstanding, it was still given out at Court, and that even after it came to Mr. *Stuart's* hands; That he had writ the quite contrary; though it's but Charity to suppose that Mr. *Stuart* was a Man of more Honour than to contribute to the Report. At last there was a necessity of making publick the Pensionary's Letter in several Languages, which had wonderful Influence upon the Minds of the Protestants of *England*, and was highly resented by King *James*.

However, King *James* had more than one Method in his View, how to accomplish his Design; for what a Parliament it may be would not do, he was resolv'd that an Army should; and therefore Care was taken to model his Troops as much to that end, as the shortness of time would allow.

*Ireland* was the inexhaustible Source whence *England* was to be furnish'd with

The Modelling of the Army.

Q

a Romish

a *Romish* Army; and an *Irish Roman-Catholick* was the most welcome Guest at *Whitehall*. They came over in Shoals to take possession of the promis'd Land; and had already swallow'd up in their Hopes the best Estates of the Hereticks in *England*. Over and above compleat *Regiments* of them, there was scarce a *Troop* or *Company* wherein some of them were not plac'd by exprefs Order from Court. Several Protestants that had serv'd well and long, were turn'd out to make room for them; and Seven considerable Officers were cashier'd in one day, meerly for refusing to admit them. The chief *Forts*, and particularly *Portsmouth* and *Hull*, the two Keys of *England*, were put into Popish Hands, and the Garisons so modell'd, that the Majority were Papists.

To over-awe the Nation, and to make Slavery familiar, this Army was *encamp'd* Yearly near *London*; where the only Publick *Chappel* in the Camp was appointed for the Service of the *Romish* Church, and strict Orders given out, That the Souldiers of that Religion should not fail every *Sunday* and Holiday to repair thither to *Mass*.

As *Ireland* was remarkable for having furnish'd King *James* with *Romish* Troops sent into *England*, so was it much more for the bare-fac'd and open Invasions that were made there, upon the Liberties and Rights of the Protestants. That Kingdom was the most proper Field to ripen their Projects in, considering that the Protestants were much out-number'd by the Papists, and had been for some Ages the constant Object of their Rancour and Envy; which had been more than once express'd in Letters of Blood.

The Methods us'd in *Ireland*.

King *James* did recall the Earl of *Clarendon*, from the Government of *Ireland*, soon after he was sent thither, and appointed the Earl of *Tyrconnel*, to succeed him, who was a Gentleman had signaliz'd himself for his Bigotry to the Church of *Rome*, and his Hatred to the Protestants. The *Roman Catholick* Clergy had recommended him to King *James* for that Post, in a Letter mention'd at length in the *Appendix*, As one that did first espouse, and chiefly maintain the Cause of the *Catholick* Clergy, against their many and powerful Enemies, for the last Five and twenty Tears; and was then the only Person under whose Fortitude and Popularity in that Kingdom, they durst with chearfulness

*Tyrconnel* made Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

*Appendix*, Numb. 21. p. 396.



and assurance own their Loyalty, and assert his Majesty's Interest. Making it therefore their humble Request, That his Majesty would be pleas'd to lodge his Authority in his hands, to the Terror of the Faction, and Encouragement of his Majesty's faithful Subjects in Ireland; promising to receive him with such Acclamations as the long-captiv'd Jews did their Redeemer Mordecai. Which Letter shew'd they were no less mistaken in their History of the Bible, than in their Advice to the King; for it does not appear by the Story of Mordecai in the Scripture, that he was ever sent to the Jews, or remov'd from the City of Susa, after he came into Favour with Ahasuerus.

However, Tyrconnel fully answer'd the hopes and expectations of the Papists, and the fears of the Protestants of Ireland; for by the Ministry of this Rigid Man was the Ruin of the Protestant English Interest in that Kingdom in a great measure completed.

At King James's Accession to the Crown, the Army of Ireland consisted of above Seven Thousand Men, all Protestants, and zealous to the Service: These were in a little time all turn'd out, and the whole Army made up of Papists, most of  
them

them the Sons or Descendants, or near Relations of those that were Attainted for the *Rebellion* in 1641; or others that had distinguish'd themselves since that time, by their notorious Villanies, and implacable Hatred to the *English* and Protestant Interest.

Though in King *Charles's* time, by the Influence of the Duke of *York*, there had been grounds of Complaint against some of the Judges in *Ireland*, upon the account of their Partiality to the Papists, yet when King *James* came to the Crown these very Judges were not thought fit enough for the Work that was design'd. It was judg'd necessary to employ the most zealous of the *Party*, those that from Interest and Inclination were the most deeply engag'd to destroy the Protestant Interest; and accordingly such were pick'd out to sit in every Court of Justice.

The Manner of filling up the Benches in *Ireland*.

The Custody of the King's Conscience and *Great Seal*, was given to Sir *Alexander Fitton*, a Person convicted of *Forgery*, not only at *Westminster-Hall*, and at *Chester*, but Fin'd for it by the Lords in Parliament. This Man was taken out of Goal, to discharge the Trust of Lord *High Chancellor*, and had

no other Qualities to recommend him besides his being a *Convert* to the *Romish* Church, and a *Renegado* to his Religion and Countrey. To him were added as Masters of *Chancery*, one *Stafford* a Popish Priest, and *O Neal*, the Son of one of the most notorious Murtherers in the *Massacre*, 1641.

In the *Kings-Bench* care was taken to place one *Nugent*, whose Father had lost his Honour and Estate, for being a principal Actor in the same *Rebellion*. This Man, who had never made any figure at the Bar, was pitch'd upon to judge whether the *Outlawries* against his Father and Fellow-Rebels, ought to be revers'd; and whither the Settlements that were made in *Ireland* upon these *Outlawries*, ought to stand good.

The next Court is that of *Exchequer*, from which only, of all the Courts in *Ireland*, there lies no Appeal, or Writ of Error in *England*. It was thought fit, that one *Rice*, a profligate Fellow, and noted for nothing but Gaming, and a mortal Inveteracy against the Protestants, should fill the place of Lord Chief Baron, This man was often heard to say, before he came to be a Judge, *That he would drive a Coach and Six Horses through the*

*Act of Settlement* : And before that Law was actually Repeal'd in King James's Parliament, he declar'd upon the Bench, *That it was against Natural Equity, and did not oblige.* It was before him, that all the *Charters* in the Kingdom were damn'd in the space of a *Term* or two ; so much was he for dispatch. A Learned *Prelate*, from whose Book all the things that here relate to that Countrey are taken, does observe, That if this Judge had been left alone, it was believ'd in a few Years he would by some Contrivance or other have given away most of the Protestants Estates in *Ireland*, without troubling a Parliament to *Attaint* them.

Dr. King  
Bishop of  
London-  
derry, his  
State of  
*Ireland*  
under  
K. James.

In the Court of *Common-Pleas* it was thought advisable, that a Protestant *Chief Justice* should continue ; yet so, as to pinion him with Two of their own sort, that might out-vote him upon occasion.

The Administration of Justice and the Laws being in such hands, it was no wonder that the poor Protestants in *Ireland* wish'd rather to have had no Laws at all, and be left to their Natural Defence, than be cheated into the necessity of submitting to Laws, that were executed only to punish, and not to protect them. Under such Judges the *Roman-*



*Catholicks* had a glorious time ; and be their Cause never so unjust, they were sure to carry it : When the Lord Chancellor did not stick on all occasions, and sometimes upon the Bench, to declare, *That the Protestants were all Rogues, and that among Forty Thousand of them, there was not one that was not a Traytor, a Rebel, and a Villain.*

The Supreme Courts being thus fill'd up, it was but reasonable all other Courts should keep pace with them. In the Year 1687. there was not a Protestant *Sheriff* in the whole Kingdom, except one, and he put in by mistake for another of the same Name, that was a *Roman-Catholick*. Some few Protestants were continued in the *Commission of the Peace* ; but they were render'd useles and insignificant, being over-power'd in every thing by the great Number of Papists join'd in Commission with them, and those, for the most part, of the very Scum of the People ; and a great many, whose Fathers had been executed for Theft, Robbery, or Murther.

The *Privy Council of Ireland* is a great part of the *Constitution*, and has considerable Priviledges and Powers annex'd to it : This was likewise so modell'd, that  
the

the Papists made the Majority ; and those few that were Protestants, chose for the most part to decline appearing at the *Board*, since they could do those of their Religion no service.

The great *Barrier* of the People's Liberties both in *England* and *Ireland* being their Right to chuse their own *Representatives* in Parliament, which being once taken away, they become Slaves to the Will of their Prince ; The Protestants in *Ireland* finding a necessity of securing this Right in their own hands, had procur'd many *Corporations* to be founded, and had built many Corporate Towns at their own Charges ; from all which the *Roman Catholicks* were by their *Charters* excluded. This *Barrier* was broken through at one stroke, by dissolving all the *Corporations* in the Kingdom, upon *Quo Warranto's* brought into the *Exchequer-Court*, and that without so much as the least shadow of Law. Hereupon New *Charters* were granted, and fill'd up chiefly with Papists, and men of desperate or no Fortunes : And a Clause was inserted in every one of them, which subjected them to the Absolute Will of the King, by which it was put in the Power of the chief Governor to turn out and

The Regulating the Corporations in Ireland.

and put in whom he pleas'd, without shewing a Reason, or any formal Tryal at Law.

The Seve-  
rities a-  
gainst the  
Protestant  
Clergy.

The Protestant Clergy felt upon all occasions the weight of *Tyrconnel's* Wrath. The *Priests* began to declare openly, That the *Tythes* belong'd to them, and forbad their people, under the pain of Damnation, to pay them to the Protestant Incumbents. This past afterwards into an *Act* of Parliament, by which not only all Tythes payable by Papists, were given to their own Priests, but likewise a way was found out to make the Popish Clergy capable of enjoying the Protestant's Tythes; Which was thus: If a Protestant happen'd to be possess'd of a *Bishoprick*, a *Dignity*, or other *Living*, he might not by this new Act demand any Tythes or Ecclesiastical Dues from any *Roman-Catholick*; and as soon as his Preferment became void by Death, Cession, or Absence, a Popish Bishop or Clergyman was put into his Place. And the Act was so express, that there needed no more to oblige all men to repute and deem a man to be a *Roman-Catholick* Bishop or Dean of any place, but the King's signifying him to be so, under his Privy Signet, or Sign Manual. As soon as any  
one

one came to be thus entitled to a Bishoprick, Deanry, or Living, immediately all the Tythes, as well of Protestants as Papists, became due to him, with all the Glebes and Ecclesiastical Dues.

The only great Nursery of Learning in *Ireland*, is the *University of Dublin*, consisting of a *Provost*, Seven Senior, and Nine Junior *Fellows*, and Seventy *Scholars*, who are partly maintain'd by a Yearly *Salary* out of the Exchequer. This *Salary* the Earl of *Tyrconnel* stopt, merely for their not admitting into a vacant *Fellowship*, contrary to their Statutes and Oaths, a Vicious Ignorant Person, who was a New Convert. Nor could he be prevail'd with by any Intercession or Intreaty, to remove the Stop; by which in effect he dissolv'd the *Foundation*, and shut up the Fountain of Learning and Religion. This appear'd more plainly afterwards to have been his Design; for it was not thought enough upon King *James's* Arrival, to take away their Maintenance, but they were further proceeded against, and the Vice-president, Fellows, and Scholars all turn'd out, their Furniture, Library, and Communion-Plate seiz'd, and every thing that belong'd

Against  
the Uni-  
versity of  
*Dublin*.



belong'd to the Colledge, and to the private Fellows and Scholars, taken away. All this was done, notwithstanding that when they waited upon King *James* at his first Arrival at *Dublin*, he was pleas'd to promise them, That *he would preserve them in their Liberties and Properties, and rather augment than diminish the Privileges and Immunities that had been granted them by his Predecessors.* In the *House* they plac'd a Garison, and turn'd the *Chappel* into a Magazine, and the *Chambers* into Prisons for the Protestants. One *More*, a Popish Priest, was made *Provost*, and one *Mackarty*, also a Priest, was made *Library-keeper*, and the whole design'd for them and their *Fraternity*.

One *Archbishoprick*, and several *Bishopricks*, and a great many other Dignities and Livings of the Church, were designedly kept vacant, and the Revenues first paid into the *Exchequer*, and afterwards dispos'd of to *Titular* Bishops and Priests, while in the mean time the Cures lay neglected ; so that it appear'd plainly that the Design was to destroy the Succession of Protestant Clergymen, At length things came to that height after King *James* was in *Ireland*, that most of the Churches in and about *Dublin*, were seiz'd

seiz'd upon by the Government ; and at last *Lutterell*, Governor of *Dublin*, issued out his *Order*, mention'd in the *Appendix*, *Forbidding more than Five Protestants to meet together, under pain of Death*. Being ask'd whither this was design'd to hinder meeting in Churches ? He answer'd, It was design'd to hinder their meeting there, as well as in other places. And accordingly all the Churches were shut up, and all Religious Assemblies through the whole Kingdom forbidden, under the pain of Death.

*Appendix,*  
Numb. 22.  
p. 399.

It were endless to enumerate all the Miseries that Reverend *Author* mentions, which the Protestants of *Ireland* suffer'd in the Reign of King *James* : But to give a decisive Blow, there was an *Act of Attainder* past in Parliament, in order to which every Member of the House of Commons return'd the Names of all such Protestant Gentlemen as liv'd near them, or in the County or Borough for which he serv'd ; and if he was a Stranger to any of them, he sent to the Country for Information about them. When this *Bill* was presented to the King for his *Assent*, the Speaker of the House of Commons told him, *That many were attainted*  
in

The Act  
of Attain-  
der in Ire-  
land.

*in that Act upon such Evidence as satisfied the House, and the rest upon common Fame.*

In this *Act* there were no fewer Attainted, than *Two Archbishops, One Duke, Seventeen Earls, Seven Countesses, Twenty eight Viscounts, Two Viscountesses, Seven Bishops, Eighteen Barons, Thirty three Baronets, Fifty one Knights, Eighty three Clergymen, Two thousand one hundred eighty two Esquires and Gentlemen*: And all of them unhear'd, declar'd and adjudg'd *Traytors, convicted and attainted of High Treason, and adjudg'd to suffer the pains of Death and Forfeiture.* The famous *Proscription of Rome* during the last *Triumvirate*, came not up in some respects to the Horror of this; for there were condemn'd in this little Kingdom more than double the Number that were *proscrib'd* through the vast Bounds of the *Roman Empire.* And to make this of *Ireland* yet the more terrible, and to put the Persons attainted out of a possibility of escaping, the *Act* it self was conceal'd, and no Protestant allow'd a Copy of it, till Four Months after it was past. Whereas in that of *Rome*, the Names of the Persons *proscrib'd* were affix'd upon all the Publick Places of the City, the very day the *Proscription* was concerted;  
and

and thereby opportunity was given to many of the Noblest Families in *Rome*, to preserve themselves by a speedy flight, for better Times.

There remain'd but one Kingdom more for the *Romish Party* to act their Designs in, and that was *Scotland*; where they reap'd a full Harvest of their Hopes, and there were scarce left the least Remains of Antient Liberty in that Nation. Their Miseries were summ'd up in one new-coin'd Word, which was us'd in all the King's *Declarations*, and serv'd to express to the full their Absolute Slavery; which was this, *That his Subjects were oblig'd to obey him without Reserve*. A Word that the Princes of the *East*, how Absolute soever they be, did never yet pretend to in their Stile, whatever they might in their Actions. But I leave the Detail of the Encroachments that were made, upon the Laws and Liberties of that Kingdom, to others that may be thought more impartial, as having suffer'd less in their Ruins.

While King *James* was thus push'd on by a headstrong Party, to enslave his Subjects, the other *Princes* and *States* of *Europe* look'd on with quite different Sentiments, according as their own Interests and

The Interests that Foreign Princes and States had in *England*.



and Safety mov'd them. The greater part did commiserate the Fate of these Three Kingdoms, and wish'd for their Deliverance. The Protestants saw with Regret, that they themselves were within an immediate Prospect of losing the most considerable Support of their Religion ; and both they and the *Roman-Catholicks* were equally convinc'd , that it was their common Interest to have *England* continue in a condition to be the Arbiter of *Christendom*, especially at a time when they saw they most needed it. On the other hand, it was the Interest of another Prince, that not only the King of *England* should be his Friend, but the Kingdom of *England* should become inconsiderable abroad, which it could not fail to be when enslav'd at home.

King *James* had been again and again solicited, not only by Protestant Princes but those of his own Religion, to enter into other Measures for the common Safety of *Europe* ; at least, not to contribute to its Ruin , by espousing an Interest which they judg'd was opposite to it. The *Emperor*, among others, had by his *Ambassador* made repeated Instances to him to this purpose, but with no better Success than the rest ; as appears by a  
*Letter*

Letter he writ to him after his *Abdication*, which has been Printed in several Languages, and was conceiv'd in Elegant *Latin*, as all the Publick *Dispatches* of that Court are. But all these Remonstrances had no weight with King *James*; though they had this good effect in the end, as to put those *Princes* and *States* upon such Measures as secur'd to them the Friendship of *England* in another way.

The Em-  
peror's  
Letter to  
K. *James*  
in *Latin*,  
printed at  
*London*,  
1689.

The Power of *France* was by this time become the Terror and Envy of the rest of *Europe*; and that *Crown* had upon all sides extended its *Conquests*. The *Empire*, *Spain*, and *Holland* seem'd to enjoy a precarious *Peace*, while the common *Enemy of the Christian Name* was making War with the *Emperor*, and the *State of Venice*, and was once very near being Master of the *Imperial Seat*, whereby he might have carried the War into the Bowels of *Germany*. The main strength of the *Empire* being turn'd against the *Turks*, and that with various Success, there was another War declar'd against the *Emperor* by *France*; so that it came to be absolutely necessary for *Spain* and *Holland* to interpose, not as Mediators, for that they were not to hope for, but

as *Allies* and Partners in the War. These last, as well as the other Princes and States that lay nearest the *Rhine*, were expos'd to the Mercy of a Prince whom they were not able to resist, if *England* should look on as Neuters, or take part against them; the last of which they had reason to fear.

Thus it happen'd that the Fortune of *England*, and that of the greatest part of *Christendom* came to be link'd together, and their common Liberties must of necessity have undergone one and the same Fate. The latter, from a Natural Principle of Self-Preservation were resolv'd to make their last Effort to break the Fetters which they saw were ready to be impos'd upon them; And the other, animated by the Example of their *Ancestors*, and the *Constitution* of their Countrey, which is diametrically opposite to Tyranny, were resolv'd to venture *All*, to retrieve themselves and their Posterity from the *Chains* that were already put upon them.

The Interest the Prince of Orange had in England.

Both the one and the other might have struggled in vain to this day with the Ruin that threaten'd them, if Heaven in pity to their Condition had not provided, in the Person of the *Prince of Orange*,

*Orange*, the only Sanctuary that was left them to shelter their sinking State. This Prince by his Mother was a *Nephew of England*, and in Right of the *Princess* his Wife, the Presumptive Heir of the Crown. By his Father's side he was Heir of an Illustrious Family, that had eterniz'd their Name, by delivering their Countrey from Slavery, and laying the Foundation of a mighty *Commonwealth*, which has since prov'd the greatest *Bulwark* of the Protestant Religion, and the chief *Support* of the Liberty of *Christendom*. A Family born for the good of Mankind, to be the Scourge of Tyrants, and Deliverers of the Oppress'd.

The Father of this Prince died young, possess'd of Hereditary *Dignities* he deriv'd from his Ancestors in the *States of the United Provinces*, which had plac'd them upon a Level with most Princes of *Europe*, and had given them a Figure in the World equal to some *Crown'd Heads*. He had married a *Princess* of *England*, the Eldest Daughter of King *Charles I.* and left her with Child of this only Son, at a Time when the Royal Family of *England* was not only bereft of their Regal Power at Home, but forc'd to seek Refuge Abroad. The Father was scarce

The ill  
Circum-  
stances of  
the House  
of *Orange*  
at his  
Birth



dead, and the Son yet unborn, when a Party in *Holland* that always oppos'd the *House of Orange*, took hold of that unhappy Juncture, to divest the Family by a Publick Decree, of all the *Dignities* and *Offices* they had enjoy'd since the first Foundation of that *Commonwealth*, and which they had so justly acquir'd as the Rewards of so many glorious Services they had done their Countrey.

Under these dismal Circumstances was the Prince of *Orange*, now King of *England* Born, and in Apartments hung with Mourning, for the Untimely Death of a Father, and the Murther of a Royal Grandfather, he first saw Light.

He was about ten years of Age, when his Uncle King *Charles* the Second was restor'd; and whither it proceeded from want of Power or of Will in the one, the Condition of the other was little better'd by that Change. It's true, King *Charles* in his Wars with *Holland* did always mention the Injury done to his Nephew, as one of the Motives of his breaking with the *States*: Yet neither in the *Treaty of Breda* in 1667, nor in the *Alliance* made at the *Hague* in 1668. nor that of the *Peace* concluded at *London* in 167 $\frac{3}{4}$  was there any notice taken of the Prince

Prince of *Orange's* Interest. In this last it's confess'd it was needless, seeing some little time before, he was restor'd to all his Hereditary *Offices* and *Dignities* upon the following Occasion.

King *Charles*, the *French King*, and the Bishop of *Munster*, had enter'd into a mutual *League*, against the *Hollanders* in the Year 1672. While in persuance of that *League*, King *Charles*, without any previous Declaration of War, did send out a strong Squadron of Ships to intercept their *Smyrna* Fleet, and ruin their Trade at Sea; and while the Bishop of *Munster* did invade the *Provinces* that lay next to him, The *French King*, at the Head of a *Royal Army* of at least 118000 Foot, and 26000 Horse, broke in upon them on the other side. Like an Impetuous Torrent he carried all before him, without any remarkable opposition, making himself Master in a few Weeks, of above Forty *Towns* and places of Strength, some without firing a Gun, and the rest with little or no Resistance. This Army was compos'd of the best *Troops* that had been seen together for some Ages before, and was made up of several Nations. Over and above the *French* themselves, there were 3000 *English*, 3000 *Catalans*, 3000

The manner how he was restor'd to the Dignities of his Family.

Memoirs  
Politique de  
Monsieur  
du Mont.

*Genoese*, and other *Italians*, 6000 *Savoyards*, 1200 *German Horse*, 10000 *Swissers*, without reckoning into the Number the Antient Regiments of that Nation in the *French Service*; and which was altogether new and extraordinary, there was a Regiment of *Swiss Horse*. Under the King in Person, this Army was commanded by Two of the greatest *Generals* of the Age, the late Prince of *Conde*, and the *Mareschal Turenne*.

The desperate  
Condition  
of *Holland*,  
An. 1672.

Never was any *State* nearer its Ruin, than that of *Holland* was upon this *Iruption*; and in the opinion of all the *World*, the end of that flourishing *Republick* was then at hand. The *French* pierc'd into the Bowels of *Holland* as far as *Utrecht*, where the King kept a splendid *Court*, and receiv'd *Embassies* from all *Parts*. He was already Master of *Three* of the *Seven Provinces*, and a *Fourth* was in the hands of the Bishop of *Munster* his Ally. The *Consternation* was so great in the rest, that it's said it was debated at *Amsterdam*, whither they should send the *Keys* of that Town to the *French King* at *Utrecht*, or hold out a *Siege*.

Scarce any thing can paint out in livelier Colours the low *Ebb* the *Commonwealth* of *Holland* was brought to at that time;

time, than the *Declaration* which the *French* King publish'd at *Arnheim*, plac'd at length in the *Appendix*. In this the *French* King declar'd that all the Inhabitants of the Towns in *Holland* that should render themselves willingly his Subjects, and receive his Troops, should not only be treated favourably, but likewise be maintain'd in their Liberties and Privileges, and enjoy the free Exercise of their Religion: But on the contrary, whoever of them did not submit themselves, of what degree or condition soever they be, or should endeavour to resist his Arms, by opening their *Sluces*, or any other way, they should be punish'd with the utmost Rigor; *his Majesty being resolv'd to give no Quarter to the Inhabitants of those Towns that shall resist his Arms, but an Order to pillage their Goods, and burn their Houses.*

*Appendix,*  
*Numb. 23.*  
*p. 402.*

Among the more immediate Causes of this surprizing *Desolation* of *Holland*, upon the Irruption of the *French* Army, there were chiefly these two: 1. The supreme Security, or rather profound Lethargy they were of late fallen into. And 2. Their Intestine Divisions.

The Causes of that  
Desolation.

As to the first, A vast Opulent Trade through most parts of the World, had



wonderfully enrich'd them, and brought them to neglect and forget the Art of War. A Peace that had continued without any remarkable Interruption for about Twenty Years at Land, lull'd them so fast asleep with false Notions of their own Strength, that they had neglected their Fortifications and Martial Discipline, and were brought to believe, that their Neighbour's Garisons and Strong Places were sufficient to cover them from all Insults.

As to the second, Their Ancestors at the first founding their *State*, taking into their Consideration, that they were to raise a *Commonwealth* out of a great many *distinct* Governments Independent originally of one another, and govern'd by Customs and Laws peculiar to every Town and Province, and how difficult it was to prevent Intestine Divisions in a Body thus aggregated, did wisely provide against such a destructive Inconvenience, by constituting an *Hereditary Stadtholder and Captain General*, whose *Office* and *Power* was to be the *Center* in which all the various Lines of their *Constitution* should meet, and the *Cement* that should keep the whole Frame together. This High and Important *Dignity*  
was

was lodg'd in the *Family of Orange*; and it was to the Auspicious Conduct of the Princes of that *House*, that the *States of Holland* own'd their first Settlement, and the Figure they have made ever since in the World.

What their Ancestors foresaw, and had thus wisely provided against, came to pass: For no sooner was this *Office and Dignity* abolish'd, upon the Death of the last Prince of *Orange*, through the Interest of a prevailing Faction, but they fell into Intestine Divisions and Animosities at Home, and sunk in their Reputation Abroad: Insomuch that it was justly said, *That instead of being the United, they were become the Dis-united Provinces.*

There may be a Third Reason given for this Chain of Misfortunes that overwhelm'd the *Hollanders* the first Year of this War. From a false, though plausible Notion of saving Money, they thought fit to reduce their Army to 25000 men, and rejected the repeated Propositions of *Spain* to enter into a *Treaty* with them for a mutual Supply of Money Yearly to *England* and *Sweden*, by which these two Crowns might be enabled and encourag'd to maintain and continue the *Triple League*. And which was  
yet

yet worse, the few Troops they had, were in a bad Condition, and sunk to a very low degree both in Discipline and Courage. Their *Fortifications* were every where fallen into decay, and their *Magazines* ill provided. To compleat all their Misfortunes, they wanted a *Head* to command them, at least one of Weight and Authority enough to support so great a *Trust*.

It were in vain to attempt to express the deplorable Condition of the *Hollanders* at that time. It's enough to say, The approach of a Triumphant King flesh'd with Victories, put them into so deep a Consternation, that a great many of their Richest Families abandon'd their Countrey, and retir'd to *Hamburgh*, *Antwerp*, and other places of Security; while the *States General* were upon giving Orders for removing the *Courts* and *Archives* from the *Hague*, for fear they should fall into the Enemy's hands. This horrid Fright, which spread it self every where, and grew every day greater, was sufficient of it self to occasion the entire Ruin of their *State*, though it had not been accompanied as it was, with *Seditions*, *Divisions*, and *Tumults* in every *Town* and *Province*, and they had no Enemy within  
their

their Bowels. Those alone did naturally tend to the Dissolution of the *Belgick Union*, without any other concurring Circumstances to hurry it on.

Matters standing thus with the *United Provinces*, they came to see, when it was almost too late, their former Errors, and more particularly that of abolishing the *Office of Stadtholder*. And now, as the last Cast for their *Liberty*, they applied to the *Prince of Orange*, young though he was, as the only Person capable to support their Tottering *State*, and to put a stop to the Miseries that overwhelm'd their *Countrey*. With the Universal Consent and Approbation of the People, and the Publick *Sanction* of the *States*, he was declar'd *Stadtholder, Captain and Admiral General*, and restor'd to all the *Dignities* of his Family.

It's hard to determine whither the Misfortunes of his *Countrey*, or the Universal Love the People bore him, contributed most to his *Restoration*. However, he was restor'd in spite of the *Barneveldt Faction*; and had the pleasure to see *De Wit*, the greatest Opposer of his *House*, among the other *Deputies* that waited upon him with the Resolutions of the *States-General*, and deliver'd him his first *Commission*. The



The History of the Mar-  
schal Tra-  
renne, by  
Monsieur  
de Buisson,  
render'd  
out of  
French by  
Ferrand  
Spence,  
1686.

The Difficulties this Young Prince had to struggle with, in supporting his sinking Countrey, would have pall'd any Courage but his own; and may in the main be gather'd from what has been already said. What these were, upon his first heading the Army, are in part so well express'd by a *French Author*, who was a considerable Actor in that War on the *French* side, and has Writ the Account of it with an Impartiality not over-frequent among the Historians of his Countrey, that it may not be amiss to Transcribe some few Passages relating to this matter, as they lye together in the *English* Translation.

The difficultiesthe  
P. of O-  
range had  
to grapple  
with for  
retrieving  
his Coun-  
treys from  
Ruin.

“ Nothing but the Season of the Year,  
“ *says he*, hinder'd the *French* from at-  
“ tempting new Conquests, or rather the  
“ Waters which cover'd the Surface of  
“ the Earth. The Duke of *Luxemburgh*  
“ being still at *Utretcht*, hop'd however,  
“ that if it once came to freeze, he might  
“ by means of the Ice surprize several  
“ *Posts* that were otherwise inaccessible.  
“ As the Enemy (*meaning the Holland-*  
“ *ers*) were not unacquainted with his  
“ Design, they had ever the Shovel and  
“ Pick-axe in their hands, to precaution  
“ them-

“ themselves against this Misfortune,  
“ upon the first Frost that should come,  
“ They broke the least piece of Ice,  
“ hoping by taking such strict care, they  
“ should render all his Measures abortive. But it happening to freeze all of  
“ a sudden, it was impossible for them to  
“ repair in several days, what fell out in  
“ one Night. This cast so great an  
“ Alarm into the Places that were the  
“ most expos’d, that People’s minds were  
“ wholly set upon removing thence what  
“ they had most precious.

“ The Consternation spread it self to  
“ the very *Hague*, which being destitute  
“ of Walls and Defence, could not otherwise expect but a strange Desolation, if  
“ the *Posts* that cover’d it came to be  
“ forc’d. However, the Prince of *Orange*,  
“ who laid the Publick Miseries as much to  
“ heart, as if they had only regarded himself, had not for all this been under any  
“ Apprehensions, if his Troops, by being so often beaten, had not utterly  
“ lost their Courage: For though the  
“ Ice seem’d to give a great Advantage  
“ to the *French*, they would however  
“ run a great Risque, in coming to attack him in places well intrench’d, and  
“ where his *Highness* might oppose  
“ against

The D. of  
Luxem-  
burgh's  
Cruelties  
at Swam-  
merdam.

“ against them as many Men as they  
 “ could have. He was busied Day and  
 “ Night either in adding new Fortifica-  
 “ tions to those that were already made,  
 “ or in encouraging his Captains and  
 “ Souldiers. But whatever care he took,  
 “ Colonel *Pervil*, abandon'd his *Post*  
 “ upon the Request of the Inhabitants  
 “ of *Dergau*, who sent for him to main-  
 “ tain their Walls. The Duke of *Luxem-*  
 “ *burgh* trusting rather to the Terror than  
 “ the Strength of his Troops, marching  
 “ in the mean while towards *Bodegrave*  
 “ and *Swammerdam*, won both, Sword in  
 “ hand. And, as if this Action had not  
 “ been sufficiently glorious by reason of  
 “ the little Opposition he met with, he  
 “ would render it the more remarkable,  
 “ not only by the Slaughter that he made  
 “ of those that were found in Arms, but  
 “ of all sorts of Persons, even Women  
 “ and Children. He was often heard,  
 “ amidst the piteous Cries that every one  
 “ made to move him to Compassion, to  
 “ bid his Souldiers give no Quarter, but  
 “ Plunder, Ravish, and Kill. He him-  
 “ self did what he said; and his Men,  
 “ after his Example, having delug'd the  
 “ Streets with Rivers of Blood, entred  
 “ the Houses, where they committed in-  
 “ conceivable

“conceivable Cruelties. Several Women were violated in their Husband’s Arms, several Maidens in their Father’s; and whoever went about to oppose such Criminal Excesses, was pitifully massacred by these *Furies*, who suffer’d themselves to be no longer govern’d, but by their disorderly Passion, and by their Cruelty. *Thus far my Author.*

Notwithstanding these Difficulties and Discouragements that seem’d insuperable, wonderful and surprizing were the Consequences of the Prince of *Orange’s* Restoration. As if that *Family* alone were design’d of Heaven to be the *Founder* and *Restorer* of *Holland*: It fell out, that immediately upon his being call’d to the *Helm*, the whole Scene of their Affairs chang’d to the better. At the Head of a small ill-disciplin’d Army, discourag’d by continual Losses, he not only put a stop to the *French Conquests*, but by taking first *Naerden* in spite of an Army near four times greater than his own, and carrying afterwards the War out of his own Countrey, he oblig’d the Enemy to abandon their Conquests in *Holland* as fast as they had gain’d them, and be  
con-



contented to retire to the Defence of their own *Frontiers*.

This War was attended with various Successes on all sides ; and most of the Princes of *Europe* came to be some way or other engag'd in it ; till at last it ended in the *Treaty of Nimeguen*. The part King *Charles* acted in all these *Transactions*, contributed but little to his Glory, for he had been unsuccessful while he was engag'd in the War ; and when he came to be a *Mediator* for the Peace, all Parties grew jealous of him, and neglected him.

It was during the Course of this War, as has been said before, that King *Charles* aton'd for all the Errors of his Reign, by marrying his *Niece*, the Lady *Mary*, to the *Prince of Orange*: And whatever were the Motives that induc'd him to comply in this with the Universal Wishes of his People, it has been found since that not only *England*, but the greatest part of *Europe* do share at this day in the *Blessings* that have attended it.

By this *Match* the Prince of *Orange* had a double Interest in *England*, both as a Prince of the Blood himself, and in Right of his *Princess* the next *Presumptive Heir*. He liv'd with King *Charles* in as much Friendship as was possible, for one that  
would

would not enter into an Interest separate from that of his Countrey, or of *England*. Insomuch that in all the Endeavours that were made to exclude the *Duke of York* from the Crown, he look'd on, without espousing any of the Parties that struggled for or against the *Bill of Exclusion*; though he knew it was design'd that *He* and the *Princess* should succeed upon the Death of King *Charles*.

When King *James* came to the Throne, the Prince of *Orange* tried all possible means to cultivate a sincere Friendship with him, and to persuade him to enter into such Measures as might tend to the Common safety of *Europe*, and the Happiness of *England*; which if King *James* had given Ear to, would have preserv'd the Crown upon his Head. And so cautious was he of giving him any reasonable ground of Complaint, that though in King *Charles*'s time he had given a Generous Welcome to the *Duke of Monmouth*, at the request of that King, upon his retiring to *Holland*; Yet as soon as he knew that that unhappy Gentleman design'd to invade *England* upon King *James*'s Accession to the Throne, he offer'd to come over in Person to his Assistance, and sent him with all Expedition the *English* and

S

*Scotch*

*Scotch Troops* that were in the Service of the *States*.

It had been happy for King *James* if he had complied with the Advice of the Prince of *Orange*, or had not by his Success against *Monmouth* been push'd on to make the Steps that have been mention'd, together with a great many more, for Brevity's sake here omitted, towards his own Ruin, and that of the *Constitution of England*. But being flatter'd with the gaudy Charms of *Absolute Power*, and the empty Merit of *Restoring the Romish Religion*, he drove on without Controul, till at last he forc'd the People of *England* upon an inevitable necessity of calling in the Prince of *Orange* to retrieve the expiring Liberties of their Country.

At the same time an' indissoluble *Friendship* and *Alliance*, which King *James* had enter'd into when Duke of *York*, and had cultivated afterwards when he came to the Crown, was a matter of that vast Consequence to the Neighbouring *Princes* and *States*, as would not permit them to stand by as unconcern'd Spectators of the Scene that was acting in *England*; but oblig'd them likewise  
to

to have recourse to the Prince of *Orange* for breaking off their own *Fetters*, by breaking first those of *England*.

But by what Steps and concurring Accidents, and with what surprizing Circumstances this Mighty *Design* came about, may some time or other, though perhaps not so properly in this Age, be the Subject of a *Second Part*, when it meets with one of more Leisure and Capacity to write it.

F I N I S.

---

S 1

A P P E N.



breaking all those of England.

But by what steps and concurring Ac-  
tivities, and with what surprising Cir-  
cumstances this Mighty Deity came  
about, may sometime or other, though  
perhaps not so properly in this Age, be  
the Subject of a Second Part, when it  
meets with one of more Beliefs and Ca-  
pacity to receive it.

# A P P E N D I X;

Containing a Collection of Instruments and Original Papers, refer'd to in the former Memoirs.

## N U M B. I.

Memoirs,  
P. 7.

*The Character of the Members of the House of Commons in Queen Elizabeth's Time ; and how differing from those in the Reign of King James.*

Naunton's  
Fragmenta  
Regalia,  
p. 13, 14.

**W**E must ascribe some part of the Commendation to the Wisdom of the Times, and the Choice of Parliament-men : For I find not that they were at any time given to any violent or pertinacious dispute ; Elections being made of grave and discreet Persons, not factious and Ambitious of Fame ; such as came not to the House with a malevolent Spirit of Contention, but with a preparation to consult on the publick good ; rather

to comply than contest with her Majesty. Neither do I find that the House was at any time weaken'd and pester'd with the admission of too many Young Heads, as it hath been of later times: Which remembers me of Recorder *Martin's* Speech, about the Tenth of our late Sovereign Lord King *James*, when there were accounts taken of Forty Gentlemen not above Twenty, and some not exceeding Sixteen; which moved him to say, That it was the antient Custom for Old Men to make Laws for Young ones; but that then he saw the Case alter'd, and that there were Children elected unto the Great Council of the Kingdom, which came to invade and invert Nature, and to enact Laws to govern their Fathers. Sure we are, the House always took the Common Cause into their Consideration, and they saw the Queen had just occasion, and need enough to use their assistance: Neither do I remember that the House did ever capitulate, or prefer their private to the publick, the Queen's Necessities, &c. but waited their times, and in the first place gave their Supply, and according to the Exigency of her Affairs; yet failed not at last to obtain what they desired; so that the Queen and her Parliaments

liaments had ever the good fortune to depart in Love, and on reciprocal Terms; which are Considerations which have not been so exactly observed in our last Assemblies as they might, and I would to God they had been: For considering the great Debt left on the King, and in what Incumbrances the House it self had then drawn him, his Majesty was not well used; though I lay not the blame on the whole Suffrage of the House, where he had many good Friends; for I dare avouch, had the House been freed of half a dozen of popular and discontented Persons, such as (with the Fellow that burnt the Temple at *Ephesus*) would be talked of, tho' but for doing of mischief, I am confident the King had obtained that which in reason, and at his first Accession he ought to have received freely, and without any condition.



Memor<sup>is</sup>,  
p. 13.

## NUMB. II.

Naunton,  
Ibid. p. 80,  
81, 82, 83.

*The Character of Cecil Earl of Salisbury;  
with his Letter to the Lord Mountjoy,  
about the Spaniard's Invading Ireland.*

AND so again to this great Master of State, and the Staff of the Queen's declining Age; who though his little crooked Person could not promise any great supportation, yet it carried thereon a Head and a Head-piece of a vast content; and therein it seems Nature was so diligent to compleat one and the best part about him, as that to the perfection of his Memory and Intellectuals, she took care also of his Senses; and to put him in *Linceos Oculos*, or to pleasure him the more, borrowed of *Argos*, so to give unto him a Prospective Sight. And for the rest of his Sensitive Virtues, his Predecessor *Walsingham* had left him a Receipt to smell out what was done in the Conclave; and his good old Father was so well seen in the Mathematicks, as that he could tell you through all *Spain*, every part, every Ship, with the Burthens, whither bound, what preparation, what Impe-

Impediments for diversion, of Enterprizes, Counsels, and Resolutions. And that we may see (as in a little Map) how docible this little Man was, I will present a Taste of his Abilities.

My Lord of *Devonshire*, (upon the certainty the *Spaniard* would invade *Ireland* with a strong Army) had written very earnestly to the Queen and the Council, for such supplies to be sent over, that might enable him to march up to the *Spaniard*, if he did land, and follow on his Prosecution against the Rebels. Sir *Robert Cecil* (besides the general Dispatch of the Council, as he often did) wrote this in private: for these two began then to love dearly.

*Mountjoy.*

*Earl of Salisbury.*

My Lord, Out of the abundance of my Affection, and the care I have of your well-doing, I must in private put you out of doubt, (for of Fear I know you cannot be otherwise sensible, than in the way of Honour) that the *Spaniard* will not come unto you this Tear; for I have it from my own, what Preparations are in all his Parts, and what he can do; for be confident, he beareth up a Reputation by seeming to embrace more than he can gripe; but the next Tear be assured he will cast over unto you some Forlorn Hopes;

*Hopes, which how they may be re-inforced beyond his present Ability, and his first Intention, I cannot as yet make any certain Judgment; but I believe out of my Intelligence, that you may expect their landing in Munster; and, the more to distract you, in several places, as at Kingsale, Beerhaven, Baltimore, where you may be sure (coming from Sea) they will first fortify, and learn the Strength of the Rebels, before they dare take the Field; howsoever (as I know you will not) lessen not your Care, neither your Defences; and whatsoever lies within my power to do you and the Publick Service, rest therefore assured.*

*Note, All came exactly to pass, as this Letter insinuates.*

---

NUMB.

NUMB. III.

*Queen Elizabeth's Speech to the House of Commons, in Answer to their Address about her Marriage.*

*Memoirs,*  
*p. 13.*

*Cambden's*  
*Hist. of*  
*Q. Eliz.*  
*p. 26. 27.*

**I**N a matter most unpleasing, most pleasing to me, is the apparent Good-Will of you and my People, as proceeding from a very good mind towards me and the Commonwealth. Concerning Marriage, which ye so earnestly move me to, I have been long since persuaded, that I was sent into this World by God to think and do those things chiefly, which may tend to his Glory. Hereupon have I chosen that kind of life which is most free from the troublesome Cares of this World, that I might attend the Service of God alone. From which, if either the tendred Marriages of most Potent Princes, or the danger of Death intended against me, could have removed me, I had long ago enjoyed the Honour of an Husband. And these things have I thought upon when I was a private Person. But now that the publick Care of governing the Kingdom is laid upon me

to



to draw upon me also the Cares of Marriage, may seem a point of inconsiderate Folly. Yea, to satisfy you, I have already joined my self in Marriage to an Husband, namely the Kingdom of *England*, And behold (*said she, which I marvel ye have forgotten*) the Pledge of this my Wedlock and Marriage with my Kingdom. (*And therewith she drew the Ring from her Finger, and shewed it, wherewith at her Coronation she had in a set form of words solemnly given her self in Marriage to her Kingdom.*) Here having made a pause: And do not (*saith she*) upbraid me with miserable lack of Children; for every one of you, and as many as are *Englishmen*, are Children and Kinsmen to me; of whom, if God deprive me not, (which God forbid) I cannot without injury be accounted Barren. But I commend you that ye have not appointed me an Husband, for that were most unworthy the Majesty of an Absolute Princess, and unbeseeming your Wisdom, which are Subjects born. Nevertheless, if it please God that I enter into another course of life, I promise you I will do nothing which may be prejudicial to the Commonwealth, but will take such an Husband as near as may be

as will have as great a care of the Commonwealth as my self. But if I continue in this kind of life I have begun, I doubt not but God will so direct mine own and your Counsels, that ye shall not need to doubt of a Successor which may be more beneficial to the Commonwealth than he which may be born of me, considering that the Issue of the best Princes many times degenerateth. And to me it shall be a full satisfaction, both for the Memorial of my Name, and for my Glory also, if when I shall let my last Breath, it be engraven upon my Marble Tomb, *Here lieth ELIZABETH, which Reigned a Virgin, and died a Virgin.*

---

Memoirs.  
p. 14.

Ibid. p.  
475.

# N U M B. IV.

*Queen Elizabeth's Letter to King Henry  
the Fourth of France, upon his changing  
his Religion.*

**A** Las! what deep Sorrow; what vehement Grief, what Sighs have I felt at my Heart, for the things which *Marlante* hath told me of? Alas! is the World come to this pass? Was it possible that any Worldly matter should make you quit the fear of God? Can we expect any happy Issue of such a Fact? Or could you think that he who hath hitherto with his own Right Hand upholden and preserved you, would now forsake you? It is a very dangerous thing to do Evil that Good may come of it. Yet I hope a sober Spirit will put you into a better Mind. In the mean time I will not omit to make it a principal part of my Prayers, the recommending you to God, beseeching him that the Hands of *Esau* may not lose you the Blessing of *Jacob*. Whereas you do religiously and solemnly offer me your Friendship, I know to my great Cost I have

have well deserved it ; neither should I repent that, had you not changed your Father. Verily, from henceforth I cannot be your Sister by the Father ; for the truth is, I shall ever more dearly love and honour mine own Father, than a false and counterfeit one : which God knoweth very well, who (I beseech him) bring you back again to a better Mind.

*Subscribed,*

*Your Sister, if it be after the  
old manner ; as for the new  
I have nothing to do with it.*

Elizabeth. R.



Memoirs,  
p. 24.

## NUMB. V.

*An Account of what was Remarkable upon  
opening the Body of Prince Henry.*

Truth  
brought  
to Light,  
or the  
first 14  
Years of  
K. James,  
p. 33.

**F**irst, we found his Liver paler than ordinary, in certain places somewhat wan, his Gall without any Choler in it, and distended with Wind.

Secondly, his Spleen was in divers places more than ordinarily black.

Thirdly, his Stomach was in no part offended.

Fourthly, his Midriff was in divers places black.

Fifthly, his Lungs were very black, and in divers places spotted, and full of a thin watery Blood.

Lastly, the Veins in the hinder part of his Head were fuller than ordinary, but the Ventricles and hollowness of the Brain were full of clear Water.

*In witness whereof, with our own Hands we  
have Subscribed this present Relation,  
the 7th day of November, 1612*

Mayerne,	} {	Palmer,
Atkins,		Gifford,
Hammond,		Buttler.

NUMB.

N U M B. VI.

Memoirs;  
P. 58.

*Mr. Secretary Vane's Notes about the Earl of Strafford's Advice to King Charles to bring over an Army from Ireland, to subdue England.*

Whitlock's  
Memoirs,  
P. 41.

*Note, This was the most dubious, and yet the most material Article against him, which contributed most to his Ruin.*

The Title of them was,

*No danger of a War with Scotland.  
If Offensive, not Defensive.*

K. Charles. **H**OW can we undertake Offensive War, if we have no more Money?

Lord *Strafford*. Borrow of the City 100000 *l*. Go on vigorously to levy Ship-money: Your Majesty having tried the Affection of your People, you are absolv'd and loose from all Rule of Government, and to do what Power will admit. Your Majesty having tried all ways, and being refus'd, shall be acquitted before God and Man. And you have an Army in *Ireland* that you may employ to reduce

T

this

this Kingdom to Obedience; for I am confident the *Scots* cannot hold out Five Months.

A Bp. *Laud*. You have tried all ways, and have always been denied; it is now lawful to take it by Force.

Lord *Cottington*. Levies abroad there may be made for Defence of the Kingdom. The Lower House are weary of the King and Church. All ways shall be just to raise Money by, in this inevitable Necessity, and are to be us'd, being lawful.

A Bp. *Laud*. For an Offensive, not a Defensive War.

Lord *Strafford*. The Town is full of Lords; put the Commission of Array on foot; and if any of them stir, we will make them smart.

NUMB.

N U M B. VII.

*The Theatrical Manner of Archbishop  
Laud's Consecrating Katherine Creed-  
Church, in London.*

Memoirs,  
p. 62.

Rushworth,  
Part. 2.  
Vol. 1.  
p. 77.

**S**T. Katherine Creed-Church being late-  
ly repaired, was suspended from all  
Divine Service, Sermons, and Sacraments,  
till it were Consecrated. Wherefore  
Dr. Laud, Lord Bishop of London, on the  
16th of January, being the Lord's Day,  
came thither in the Morning to Conse-  
crate the same. Now because great Ex-  
ceptions were taken at the Formality  
thereof, we will briefly relate the manner  
of the Consecration.

At the Bishop's approach to the West-  
door of the Church, some that were  
prepared for it, cried with a loud voice,  
*Open, open, ye everlasting Doors, that the  
King of Glory may enter in!* and present-  
ly the Doors were Opened: And the Bi-  
shop, with some Doctors, and many  
other principal Men, went in, and im-  
mediately falling down upon his Knees,  
with his Eyes lifted up, and his Arms  
spread



spread abroad, uttered these words, *This Place is holy, this Ground is holy; In the Name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, I pronounce it holy.*

Then he took up some of the dust, and threw it up into the Air, several times in his going up towards the Chancel; when they approached near to the Rail and *Communion-Table*, the Bishop bowed towards it several times, and returning, they went round the Church in Procession, saying the Hundredth Psalm; after that, the 19th Psalm, and then said a Form of Prayer, *Lord Jesus Christ, &c.* and concluding, *We Consecrate this Church, and separate it unto thee, as holy Ground, not to be prophaned any more to common use.*

After this, the Bishop being near the *Communion Table*, and taking a written Book in his hand, pronounced Curses upon those that should afterwards prophane that Holy Place, by Musters of Souldiers, or keeping prophane Law Courts, or carrying Burdens through it; and at the end of every Curse, he bowed towards the *East*, and said, *Let all the People say, Amen.*

When the Curses were ended, he pronounced a number of Blessings upon all those

those that had any hand in Framing and Building of that Sacred and Beautiful Church, and those that had given, and should hereafter give any Chalices, Plate, Ornaments, or Utenfils: And at the end of every Blessing, he bowed towards the East, saying, *Let all the People say, Amen.*

After this followed the *Sermon*; which being ended, the Bishop consecrated and administred the Sacrament, in manner following:

As he approached the *Communion-Table* he made many several lowly Bowings; and coming up to the side of the Table where the Bread and Wine were covered, he bowed seven times, and then after the reading of many Prayers, he came near the Bread, and gently lifted up the corner of the Napkin wherein the Bread, was laid; and when he beheld the Bread, he laid it down again, flew back a step or two, bowed three several times towards it, then he drew near again, and opened the Napkin, and bowed as before.

Then he laid his hand on the Cup, which was full of Wine, with a Cover upon it, which he let go again, went back, and bowed thrice towards it, then

he came near again; and lifting up the Cover of the Cup, looked into it, and seeing the Wine, he let fall the Cover again, retired back, and bowed as before; then he received the Sacrament, and gave it to some principal Men; after which, many Prayers being said, the Solemnity of the Consecration ended.

Memoirs,  
P. 63.

## N U M B. VIII.

*The Order of Council against Archibald the King's Fool, for affronting Archbishop Laud.*

Rushworth,  
Part 2.  
Vol. 1.  
P. 471.

**I**T is this day ordered by his Majesty, with the advice of the Board, That *Archibald Armstrong* the King's Fool, for certain scandalous Words of a high nature, spoken by him against the Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury* his Grace, and proved to be uttered by him by two Witnesses, shall have his coat pull'd over his Head, and be discharged of the King's Service, and banished the Court; for which the Lord Chamberlain of the King's Household is prayed and required to give Order to be executed. *And immediately the same was put in Execution.*

N U M B.

N U M B. IX.

Memoirs,  
p. 67.

*The Petition of the House of Commons, and their Remonstrance of the State of the Nation, presented to K. Charles I. at his Return from Scotland in 1641. Together with the King's Answer, and the Declaration he afterwards publish'd to the same purpose.*

Husband's  
Collect, in  
4to, from  
p. 1. to p.  
29.

*Note, That the Matters contain'd in these Four Papers, were the Grounds of the Civil War, and afterwards came to be decided by the Sword.*

*The Petition of the House of Commons, which accompanied the Declaration of the State of the Kingdom, when it was presented to his Majesty at Hampton-Court,*

*Most Gracious Sovereign,*

**Y**Our Majesty's most humble and faithful Subjects the Commoners in this present Parliament Assembled, do with much thankfulness and joy, acknowledge the great mercy and favour of God, in giving your Majesty a safe and peaceable return out of Scotland into your Kingdom of England, where the pressing dan-



gers and distempers of the State have caused us with much earnestness to desire the comfort of your gracious presence, and likewise the Unity and Justice of your Royal Authority to give more life and power to the dutiful and loyal Counsels and Endeavours of your Parliament, for the prevention of that eminent ruin and destruction wherein your Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland* are threatned. The duty which we owe to your Majesty and our Countrey, cannot but make us very sensible and apprehensive, that the multiplicity, sharpness and malignity of those evils under which we have now many years suffered, are fomented and cherished by a corrupt and ill-affected party, who amongst other their mischievous devices for the alteration of Religion and Government, have thought by many false scandals and imputations cunningly insinuated, and dispersed amongst the people, to blemish and disgrace our proceedings in this Parliament, and to get themselves a party and faction amongst your Subjects, for the better strengthening of themselves in their wicked courses; and hindring those Provisions and Remedies which might by the wisdom of your Majesty, and Counsel of your  
your

your Parliament be opposed against them.

For preventing whereof, and the better information of your Majesty, your Peers, and all other your loyal Subjects, we have been necessitated to make a Declaration of the state of the Kingdom, both before and since the Assembly of this Parliament unto this time, which we do humbly present to your Majesty without the least intention to lay any blemish upon your Royal Person, but only to represent how your Royal Authority and Trust have been abused, to the great prejudice and danger of your Majesty, and of all your good Subjects.

And because we have reason to believe that those malignant parties whose proceedings evidently appear to be mainly for the advantage and encrease of Popery, is composed, set up, and acted by the subtil practice of the Jesuits, and other Engineers and Factors for *Rome*, and to the great danger of this Kingdom, and most grievous affliction of your loyal Subjects, have so far prevailed, as to corrupt divers of your Bishops, and others in prime places of the Church, and also to bring divers of these Instruments to be of your Privy Council, and other employments

ployments of trust and nearness about your Majesty, the Prince, and the rest of your Royal Children.

And by this means hath had such an operation in your Council, and the most important affairs and proceedings of your Government, that a most dangerous division and chargeable preparation for War betwixt your Kingdom of *England* and *Scotland*, the increase of Jealousies betwixt your Majesty and your most obedient Subjects, the violent distraction and interruption of this Parliament, the insurrection of the Papists in your Kingdom of *Ireland*, and bloody Massacre of your people, have been not only endeavoured and attempted, but in a great measure compassed and effected.

For preventing the final accomplishment whereof, your poor Subjects are enforced to engage their persons and estates to the maintaining of a very expenceful and dangerous War, notwithstanding they have already since the beginning of this Parliament undergone the charge of 150000 pounds sterling, or thereabouts, for the necessary support and supply of your Majesty in these present and perilous Designs. And because all our most faithful endeavours and engagements will

will be ineffectual for the peace, safety, and preservation of your Majesty and your people, if some present, real and effectual course be not taken for suppressing this wicked and malignant party,

We your most humble and obedient Subjects do with all faithfulness and humility beseech your Majesty,

1. That you will be graciously pleased to concur with the humble desires of your people in a Parliamentary way, for the preserving the peace and safety of the Kingdom from the malicious Designs of the Popish party.

For depriving the Bishops of their Votes in Parliament, and abridging their immoderate power usurped over the Clergy, and other your good Subjects, which they have most perniciously abused, to the hazard of Religion, and great prejudice and oppression of the Laws of the Kingdom, and just liberty of your people.

For the taking away such oppressions in Religion, Church-Government, and Discipline, as have been brought in and fomented by them.

For uniting all such your loyal Subjects together, as join in the same fundamental



mental truths against the Papist, by removing some oppressions and unnecessary Ceremonies, by which divers weak consciences have been scrupled, and seem to be divided from the rest : For the due execution of those good Laws which have been made for securing the liberty of your Subjects.

2. That your Majesty will likewise be pleased to remove from your Council all such as persist to favour, and promote any of those pressures and corruptions wherewith your people have been grieved ; and that for the future your Majesty will vouchsafe to imploy such persons in your great and publick Affairs, and to take such to be near you in places of trust, as your Parliament may have cause to confide in ; that in your Princely goodness to your people, you will reject and refuse all mediation and solicitation to the contrary, how powerful and near soever.

3. That you would be pleased to forbear to alienate any of the forfeited and escheated Lands in *Ireland*, which shall accrue to your Crown by reason of this Rebellion, that out of them the Crown may be the better supported, and some satisfaction made to your Subjects of this Kingdom, for the great expences they are like to undergo this War. Which

Which humble desires of ours being graciously fulfilled by your Majesty, we will by the blessing and favour of God most chearfully undergo the hazard and expences of this War, and apply our selves to such other courses and counsels as may support your Royal Estate with honour and plenty at home, with power and reputation abroad; and by our loyal affections, obedience, and service, lay a sure and lasting foundation of the greatness and prosperity of your Majesty, and your Royal Posterity in future times.

---

*A Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom.*

*Die Mercurii, 15 Decemb. 1642.*

**T**HE Commons in this present Parliament assembled, having with much earnestness, and faithfulness of affection, and zeal to the publick good of this Kingdom, and his Majesty's honour and service, for the space of twelve months, wrestled with the great dangers and fears, the pressing Miseries and Calamities, the various distempers and disorders, which had not only assaulted, but even

even overwhelmed and extinguish'd the liberty, peace, and prosperity of this Kingdom, the comfort and hopes of all his Majesty's good Subjects, and exceedingly weakned and undermined the foundation and strength of his own Royal Throne; Do yet find an abounding Malignity and Opposition in those parties and factions, who have been the cause of those evils, and do still labour to cast aspersions upon that which hath been done, and to raise many difficulties for the hindrance of that which remains yet undone, and to foment Jealousies betwixt the King and the Parliament; that so they may deprive him his people, of the fruit of his own gracious Intentions, and their humble desires of procuring the publick peace, safety, and happiness of this Realm. For the preventing of those miserable effects, which such malicious endeavours may produce, We have thought good to declare,

1. *The Root and the growth of these mischievous Designs,*
2. *The Maturity and Ripeness, to which they have attained before the beginning of the Parliament,*
3. *The effectual means which hath been used*

used for the extirpation of those dangerous evils, and the Progress which hath therein been made by his Majesty's goodness, and the Wisdom of the Parliament.

4. The ways of obstruction and opposition by which that Progress hath been interrupted.

5. The courses to be taken for the removing those Obstacles, and for the accomplishing of our most dutiful and faithful intentions and endeavours of restoring and establishing the Antient Honour, Greatness, and Security of this Crown and Nation. The Root of all this mischief, We find to be a malignant, and pernicious design, of subverting the Fundamental Laws and Principles of Government; upon which the Religion and Justice of this Kingdom are firmly established. The Actors and Promoters hereof have been,

1. The Jesuited Papists who hate the Laws, as the Obstacles of that Change and Subversion of Religion, which they so much long for.

2. The Bishops, and the corrupt part of the Clergy, who cherish formality and superstition, as the natural effects, and more probable supports of their own Ecclesiastical Tyranny and Usurpation.

3. Such Counsellors and Courtiers as for  
private



*private ends have engaged themselves to further the interests of some foreign Princes or States, to the prejudice of his Majesty, and the State at home.*

The common Principles, by which they moulded and governed all their particular Counsels and Actions were these :

*First, To maintain continual differences and discontents betwixt the King and the People, upon Questions of Prerogative and Liberty, that so they might have the advantage of siding with him, and under the notions of men addicted to his service, gain to themselves and their parties the places of greatest trust and power in the Kingdom.*

*A second, To suppress the purity and power of Religion, and such as were best affected to it; as being contrary to their own ends, and the greatest impediment to that Change which they thought to introduce.*

*A third, To conjoyn those parties of the Kingdom, which were most propitious to their own ends, and to divide those who were most opposite, which consisted in many particular Observations; to cherish the Arminian part in those points, wherein they agree with the Papists; to multiply and enlarge the difference between the common Protestants  
and*

*and those whom they call Puritans, to introduce and countenance such Opinions and Ceremonies, as are fittest for accomodation with Popery, to increase and maintain ignorance, looseness and prophaneness in the people: That of those three parties, Papists, Arminians, and Libertines, they might compose a body fit to act such counsels and resolutions, as were most conducive to their own ends.*

*A fourth, To disaffect the King to Parliaments, by slanders and false imputations; and by putting him upon other ways of supply, which in shew and appearance were fuller of advantage than the ordinary course of Subsidies, though in truth they brought more loss than gain both to the King and People, and have caused the distractions under which we both suffer.*

As in all compounded bodies, the Operations are qualified according to the predominant Element; so in this mixt party, the Jesuited Counsels being most active and prevailing, may easily be discovered to have had the greatest sway in all their determinations; and if they be not prevented, are like to devour the rest, or to turn them into their own nature.

In the beginning of his Majesty's Reign, the party begun to revive and flourish again, having been somewhat damp't

U

by

by the breach with *Spain* in the last year of King *James*, and by his Majesty's Marriage with *France*; the interests and Councils of that State being not so contrary to the good of Religion, and the prosperity of this Kingdom, as those of *Spain*; and the Papists of *England* having been ever more addicted to *Spain* than *France*; yet they still retained a purpose and resolution to weaken the Protestant parties in all parts, and even in *France*, whereby to make way for the change of Religion, which they intended at home.

The first effect and evidence of their recovery and strength was the dissolution of the Parliament at *Oxford*, after there had been given two Subsidies to his Majesty; and before they received relief in any one Grievance, many other more miserable effects followed,

The loss of the *Rochel* Fleet, by the help of our Shipping set forth and delivered over to the *French*, in opposition to the advice of Parliament, which left that Town without defence by Sea, and made way not only to the loss of that important place, but likewise to the loss of all the strength and security of the Protestant Religion in *France*.

The diverting of his Majesty's course of Wars

Wars from the *West-Indies*; which was the most facile and hopeful way for this Kingdom to prevail against the *Spaniard*; to an expenceful and successless attempt upon *Cales*, which was so ordered, as if it had rather been intended to make us weary of War than to prosper in it.

The precipitate breach with *France*, by taking their Ships to a great value, without making recompence to the *English*, whose Goods were thereupon imbarr'd and confiscate in that Kingdom.

The Peace with *Spain* without consent of Parliament, contrary to the promise of K. *James* to both Houses; whereby the *Palatine* Cause was deserted, and left to chargeable and hopeless Treaties, which for the most part, were managed by those who might justly be suspected to be no Friends to that Cause.

The charging of the Kingdom with Billeted Souldiers in all parts of it, and that concomitant design of *German* Horse, that the Land might either submit with fear, or be enforced with rigour to such Arbitrary Contributions as should be required of them.

The dissolving of the Parliament in the second year of his Majesty's Reign, after a Declaration of their intent to grant five Subsidies.



The exacting of the like proportion of five Subsidies after the Parliament dissolved, by Commission of Loan ; and divers Gentlemen and others imprisoned for not yielding to pay that Loan, whereby many of them contracted such sicknesses as cost them their Lives. Great sums of Money required and raised by Privy Seals. An unjust and pernicious attempt to extort great payments from the Subject, by way of Excise ; and a Commission issued under Seal to that purpose. The Petition of Right, which was granted in full Parliament, blasted with an illegal Declaration, to make it destructive to it self, to the Power of Parliament, to the Liberty of the Subject, and to that purpose printed with it ; and the Petition made of no use, but to shew the bold and presumptuous injustice of such Ministers as durst break the Laws, and suppress the Liberties of the Kingdom, after they had been so solemnly and evidently declared.

Another Parliament dissolved, 4 Car. The privilege of Parliament broken by imprisoning divers Members of the House, detaining them close prisoners for many months together, without the Liberty of using Books, Pen, Ink, or Paper, denying

ing them all the comforts of life, all means of preservation of health, not permitting their Wives to come unto them, even in time of their sickness. And for the compleating of that cruelty, after years spent in such miserable durance, depriving them of the necessary means of Spiritual consolation, not suffering them to go abroad to enjoy God's Ordinances in God's House, or God's Ministers to come to them, to administer comfort unto them in their private Chambers; and to keep them still in this oppressed condition, not admitting them to be bailed according to Law, yet vexing them with Informations in inferior Courts, sentencing and fining some of them for matters done in Parliament, and extorting the payments of those Fines from them, enforcing others to put in security of good behaviour before they could be released.

The Imprisonment of the rest which refused to be bound, still continued; which might have been perpetual, if necessity had not the last year brought another Parliament to relieve them; of whom one died, by the cruelty and harshness of his Imprisonment, which would admit of no relaxation, notwithstanding the imminent danger of his life did sufficiently

ciently appear by the declaration of his Physician: And his Release, or at least, his Refreshment, was sought by many humble Petitions. And his Blood still cries either for Vengeance, or Repentance of those Ministers of State, who have at once obstructed the Course both of his Majesty's Justice and Mercy.

Upon the Dissolution of both these Parliaments, untrue and scandalous Declarations published, to asperse their Proceedings and some of their Members, unjustly to make them odious, and colour the Violence which was used against them. Proclamations set out to the same purpose; and to the great dejecting of the hearts of the People, forbidding them even to speak of Parliaments.

After the Breach of Parliament, in the Fourth Year of his Majesty, Injustice, Oppression, and Violence broke in upon us, without any Restraint or Moderation; and yet the first Project was the great Sums exacted through the whole Kingdom, for default of Knighthood, which seemed to have some colour and shadow of a Law, yet if it be rightly examined by that obsolete Law which was pretended for it, it would be found to be against all the Rules of Justice,  
both

both in respect of the Persons charged the Proportion of the Fines demanded, and the absurd and unreasonable Manner of their Proceedings. Tunnage and Poundage hath been received without colour or pretence of Law; many other heavy Impositions continued against Law; and some so unreasonable, that the Sum of the charge exceeds the Value of the Goods. The Book of Rates lately inhaused to a high proportion; and such Merchants as would not submit to their illegal and unreasonable Payments, were vexed and oppressed above measure; and the ordinary course of Justice, the common Birth-right of the Subject of *England*, wholly obstructed unto them. And although all this was taken upon pretence of guarding the Sea, yet a new and unheard-of Tax of Ship-money was devised, upon the same pretence. By both which there was charged upon the Subject near 700,000 *Pounds* some Years; and yet the Merchants have been left so naked to the violence of the *Turkish* Pyrates, that many great Ships of Value, and thousands of his Majesty's Subjects have been taken by them, and do still remain in miserable Slavery.



The enlargment of Forests, contrary to *Charta de Foresta*, and the Composition thereupon. The exactions of Coat and Conduct-mony, and divers other Military Charges. The taking away the Arms of the Trained-Bands of divers Counties. The desperate design of engrossing all the Gunpowder into one hand, keeping it in the Tower of *London*, and setting so high a Rate upon it, that the poorer sort were not able to buy it, nor could any have it without License; thereby to leave the several parts of the Kingdom destitute of their necessary defence; and by selling so dear that which was sold, to make an unlawful advantage of it, to the great charge and detriment of the Subject. The general destruction of the King's Timber, especially that in the Forest of *Dean*, sold to Papists, which was the best Store-house of this Kingdom, for the maintenance of our Shipping. The taking away of men's Right, under colour of the King's Title to Land between high and low Water Marks. The Monopolies of Soap, Salt, Wine, Leather, Sea-Coal, and in a manner, of all things of most common and necessary use. The restraint of the Liberties of the Subjects in their Habitation

on, Trades, and other Interest. Their vexation and oppression by Purveyors, Clerks of the Market, and Salt-Petremen. The sale of pretended Nufances, as Buildings in and about *London*, Conversion of Arable into Pasture, continuance of Pasture, under the Name of Depopulation, have drawn many Millions out of the Subject's Purfes, without any considerable Profit to his Majesty. Large quantities of Common, and several Grounds, have been taken from the Subject, by colour of the Statute of Improvement, and by abuse of the Commission of Sewers, without their consent, and against it. And not only private Interest, but also publick Faith have been broken, in seizing of the Money and Bullion in the Mint; and the whole Kingdom like to be robb'd at once, in that abominable Project of Brass Money. Great numbers of his Majesty's Subjects, for refusing those unlawful Charges, have been vex'd with long and expensive Suits; some fined and censured, others committed to long and hard Imprisonments and Confinements, to the loss of Health of many, of life in some; and others have had their Houses broken up, their Goods seized; some have been restrained

strained from their lawful Callings : Ships have been interrupted in their Voyages, surprized at Sea in an Hostile manner by Projectors, as by a common Enemy? Merchants prohibited to unlade their Goods in such Ports as were for their own advantage, and forced to bring them to those places which were most for the advantages of the Monopolizers and Projectors. The Court of Star-chamber hath abounded in extravagant Censures, not only for the maintenance and improvement of Monopolies, and other unlawful Taxes, but for divers other Causes, where there had been no offence, or very small; whereby his Majesty's Subjects have been oppressed by grievous Fines, Imprisonments, Stigmatizings, Mutilations, Whippings, Pillories, Gags, Confinements, Banishments; after so rigid a manner, as hath not only deprived men of the society of their Friends, exercise of their Professions, comfort of Books, use of Paper or Ink, but even violated that near Union which God hath establish'd betwixt Men and their Wives, by forced and constrained Separation; whereby they have been bereaved of the comfort and conversation one of another for many years together, without hope of relief;

relief ; if God had not by his over-ruling Providence, given some interruption to the prevailing Power and Counsel of those who were the Authors and Promoters of such peremptory and heady Courses.

Judges have been put out of their Places, for refusing to do against their Oaths and Consciences: Others have been so awed, that they durst not do their duties ; and the better to hold a Rod over them, the Clause *quam diu se bene gesserint* was left out of their Patents , and a new Clause, *durante bene placito*, inserted. Lawyers have been check'd for being faithful to their Clients ; Solicitors and Attornies have been threatned, and some punished for following lawful Suits. And by this means all the approaches to Justice were interrupted and forecluded. New Oaths have been forced upon the Subject against Law ; new Judicatories erected without Law : The Council-Table have, by their Orders, offered to bind the Subjects in their Freeholds, Estates, Suits, and Actions. The pretended Court of the *Earl Marshal* was Arbitrary and Illegal in its Being and Proceedings. The Chancery, Exchequer-Chamber, Court of Wards, and other

*Englisch*



*English* Courts have been grievous in exceeding their Jurisdiction. The Estate of many Families weaken'd, and some ruin'd by excessive Fines, exacted from them for Composition of Wardships. All Leases of above a hundred Years, made to draw on Wardship contrary to Law. Undue proceedings used in the finding of Offices, to make the Jury find for the King. The Common-Law Courts seeing all Men more inclin'd to seek Justice there, where it may be fitted to their own desire, are known frequently to forsake the Rules of the Common-Law, and straining beyond their bounds, under pretence of Equity to do Injustice. Titles of Honour, Judicial Places, Serjeantships at Law, and other Offices, have been sold for great Sums of Money; whereby the common Justice of the Kingdom hath been much endanger'd, not only by opening a way of Employment in places of great Trust and Advantage to men of weak Parts, but also by giving occasion to Bribery, Extortion, Partiality: It seldom happening that Places ill-gotten are well used. Commissions have been granted for examining the excess of Fees; and when great Exactions have been discovered, Compositions

tions have been made with Delinquents, not only for the time past, but likewise for immunity and Security in offending for the time to come; which under colour of remedy, hath but confirmed and increased the Grievance to the Subject. The usual course of pricking Sheriffs not observed, but many times Sheriffs made in an extraordinary way; sometimes as a Punishment and Charge unto them; sometimes such were prick'd out, as would be Instruments to execute whatsoever they would have to be done.

The Bishops and the rest of the Clergy did triumph in the Suspensions, Excommunications, Depravations, and Degradations of divers painful, learned and pious Ministers, in the vexation and grievous oppression of great numbers of his Majesty's good Subjects. The High Commission grew to such excess of sharpness and severity, as was not much less than the *Romish* Inquisition; and yet in many cases by the Archbishop's Power was made much more heavy, being assisted and strengthen'd by Authority of the Council-Table.

The Bishops and their Courts were as eager in the Countrey; and although their Jurisdiction could not reach so high  
in

in rigor and extremity of Punishment, yet were they no less grievous in respect of the generality and multiplicity of Vexations, which lighting upon the meaner sort of Tradesmen and Artificers, did impoverish many Thousands, and so afflict and trouble others, that great numbers, to avoid their miseries, departed out of the Kingdom, some into *New-England*, and other parts of *America*, others into *Holland*, where they have transported their Manufactures of Cloath, which is not only a loss by diminishing the present Stock of the Kingdom, but a great Mischief, by impairing and endangering the loss of that peculiar Trade of Cloathing, which hath been a plentiful Fountain of Wealth and Honour to this Nation. Those were fittest for Ecclesiastical Preferment, and soonest obtained it, who were most officious in promoting Superstition, most virulent in railing against Godliness and Honesty.

The most publick and solemn Sermons before his Majesty, were either to advance Prerogative above Law, and decry the Property of the Subject; or full of such kind of Invectives, whereby they might make those odious who sought to maintain the Religion, Laws, and Liberties of

of the Kingdom ; and such men were sure to be weeded out of the Commission of the Peace, and out of all other Employments of Power in the Government of the Countrey. Many Noble Personages were Counsellors in Name, but the Power and Authority remained in a few of such as were most addicted to this Party ; whose Resolutions and Determinations were brought to the Table for countenance and execution, and not for debate and deliberation ; and no man could offer to oppose them , without disgrace and hazard to himself : Nay, all those that did not wholly concur, and actively contribute to the furtherance of their Designs, though otherwise Persons of never so great Honour and Abilities , were so far from being employed in any place of Trust and Power , that they were neglected, discountenanced , and upon all occasions injured and oppressed. This Faction was grown to that height and entireness of Power, that now they began to think of finishing their Work, which consisted of these Three parts.

1. *The Government must be set free from all Restraint of Laws concerning our Persons and States.*

2. *There*



2. *There must be a Conjunction betwixt Papists and Protestants in Doctrine, Discipline, and Ceremonies; only it must not yet be called Popery.*

3. *The Puritans, under which Name they include all those that desire to preserve the Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdom, and to maintain Religion in the Power of it, must be either rooted out of the Kingdom with force, or driven out with fear. For the effecting of this, it was thought necessary to reduce Scotland to such Popish Superstitions and Innovations as might make them apt to join with England in the great Change which was intended. Whereupon new Canons, and a new Liturgy were prest upon them; and when they refused to admit of them, an Army was raised to force them to it; towards which the Clergy and the Papists were very forward in their Contribution. The Scots likewise raised an Army for their defence: And when both Armies were come together, and ready for a bloody Encounter, his Majesty's own gracious Disposition, and the Counsel of the English Nobility, and dutiful Submission of the Scots, did so far prevail against the evil Counsel of others, that a Pacification was made, and his Majesty returned with Peace, and much Honour to London.*

The

The unexpected Reconciliation was most acceptable to all the Kingdom, except to to the Malignant Party, whereof the Archbishop and the Earl of *Strafford* being Heads, they and their Faction began to inveigh against the Peace, and to aggravate the Proceedings of the States; which so incensed his Majesty, that he forthwith prepared again for War. And such was their Confidence, that having corrupted and distempered the whole Frame and Government of the Kingdom, they did now hope to corrupt that which was the only means to restore all to a right frame and temper again; to which end they persuaded his Majesty to call a Parliament; not to seek Counsel and Advice of them; but to draw Countenance and Supply from them, and engage the whole Kingdom in their Quarrel; and in the mean time continued all their unjust Levies of Money; resolving either to make the Parliament pliant to their Will, and to establish mischief by a Law, or else to break it. And with more colour to go on by violence to take what they could not obtain by Consent, the Ground alledged for the Justification of this War, was this;

X

That

That the undutiful Demands of the Parliament of *Scotland*, was a sufficient Reason for his Majesty to take Arms against them, without hearing the Reason of those Demands: And thereupon a new Army was prepared against them; their Ships were seized in all Ports both of *England* and *Ireland*, and at Sea; their Petitioners rejected, their Commissioners refused Audience; This whole Kingdom most miserably distemper'd with Levies of Men and Money, and Imprisonments of those who denied to submit to those Levies. The Earl of *Strafford* pass'd into *Ireland*, caused the Parliament there to declare against the *Scots*, to give four Subsidies towards that War; and to engage themselves, their Lives and Fortunes, for the prosecution of it; and gave directions for an Army of Eight thousand Foot, and One thousand Horse, to be levied there, which were for the most part Papists. The Parliament met upon the 13<sup>th</sup> of *April*. 1640. The Earl of *Strafford*, and Archbishop of *Canterbury*, with their Party, so prevailed with his Majesty, that the *House of Commons* was prest to yield to a Supply for maintenance of the War with *Scotland*, before they had provided any Relief for the

the great and pressing Grievances of the People ; which being against the Fundamental Privilege and proceeding of Parliament, was yet in humble Respect to his Majesty so far admitted, as that they agreed to take the matter of Supply into Consideration ; and two several days it was debated. Twelve Subsidies were demanded for the Release of Ship-money alone ; a third day was appointed for conclusion ; when the Heads of that Party begun to fear the People might close with the King in satisfying his desire of Money ; but that withal they were like to blast their malicious designs against *Scotland*, finding them very much indisposed to give any countenance to that War ;

Thereupon they wickedly advised the King to break off the Parliament, and to return to the ways of Confusion , in which their own evil intentions were most like to prosper and succeed.

After the Parliament ended the fifth of May, 1640, this Party grew so bold, as to counsel the King to supply himself out of his Subject's Estates by his own Power, at his own Will, without their Consent. The very next day some *Members of both Houses* had their Studies and Cabinets,



yea their Pockets searched : Another of them, not long after , was committed close Prisoner, for not delivering some Petitions which he received by Authority of that *House* : And if harsher courses were intended (as was reported) it is very probable that the sickness of the Earl of *Strafford*, and the Tumultuous Rising in *Southwark*, and about *Lambeth*, were the Causes that such violent Intentions were not brought to execution. A false and scandalous Declaration against the *House of Commons* , was published in his Majesty's Name, which yet wrought little effect with the People, but only to manifest the Impudence of those who were Authors of it.

A forced Loan of Money was attempted in the City of *London*.

The Lord Mayor and Aldermen in their several Wards enjoined to bring in a List of the Names of such Persons as they judged fit to lend, and of the Sum they should lend. And such Aldermen as refused so to do, were committed to Prison.

The *Archbishop* and the other *Bishops* and *Clergy* continued the *Convocation*, and by a new Commission turned it to a *Provincial Synod* ; in which, by an unheard-

heard-of presumption, they made *Canons* that contain in them many matters contrary to the King's Prerogative, to the Fundamental Laws and Statutes of the Realm, to the Right of *Parliaments*, to the Property and Liberty of the Subject, and matters tending to Sedition, and of dangerous consequence, thereby establishing their own Usurpations, justifying their Altar-Worship, and those other Superstitious Innovations, which they formerly introduced without warrant of Law.

They imposed a new Oath upon divers of his Majesty's Subjects, both *Ecclesiastical* and *Lay*, for maintenance of their own Tyranny; and laid a great Tax upon the Clergy for Supply of his Majesty; and generally they shewed themselves very affectionate to the War with *Scotland*, which was by some of them stiled *Bellum Episcopale*; and a Prayer composed, and enjoined to be read in all Churches, calling the *Scots Rebels*, to put the two Nations into Blood, and make them irreconcilable. All those pretended *Canons* and *Constitutions* were armed with the several Censures of *Suspension*, *Excommunication*, *Deprivation*, by which they would have thrust out all the good

Ministers and most of the well-affected People of the Kingdom, and left an easy Passage to their own Design of Reconciliation with *Rome*. The *Popish* Party enjoined such exemptions from the *Penal Laws*, as amounted to a Toleration, besides many other Encouragements and Court-Favours: They had a Secretary of State, Sir *Francis Windebank*, a powerful Agent for the speeding of all their desires; a *Pope's Nuncio* residing here to act and govern them according to such influences as he received from *Rome*, and to intercede for them with the most powerful concurrence of the Foreign Princes of that Religion: By his Authority the *Papists* of all sorts, Nobility, Gentry, and Clergy, were convoked after the manner of a *Parliament*; new Jurisdictions were erected of *Romish Archbishops*. Taxes levied, another State moulded within this State, independent in Government, contrary in Interest and Affection, secretly corrupting the ignorant or negligent Professors of our Religion, and closely uniting and combining themselves against such as were found, in this posture waiting for an opportunity by force to destroy those whom they could not hope to seduce. For the effecting whereof,

whereof, they were strengthen'd with Arms and Munition, encouraged by superstitious Prayers, enjoined by the *Nuncio* to be Weekly made, for the prosperity of some great design. And such power had they at Court, that secretly a Commission was issued out, intended to be issued to some Great Men of that Profession, for the levying of Souldiers, and to command and employ them according to private Instructions, which we doubt were framed for the advantage of those who were the Contrivers of them: His Majesty's Treasure was consumed, his Revenue anticipated; his Servants and Officers compelled to lend great Sums of Money: Multitudes were called to the *Council-Table*, who were tired with long attendances there, for refusing illegal Payments. The *Prisons* were filled with their Commitments; many of the Sheriffs summoned into the *Star-Chamber*, and some imprisoned, for not being quick enough in levying the Ship-money; the People languished under grief and fear, no visible hope being left, but in desperation. The Nobility began to be weary of their silence, and patience, and sensible of the Duty and Trust which belongs to them; and thereupon some of



the most eminent of them did petition his Majesty at such a time when Evil Counsels were so strong, that they had reason to expect more hazard to themselves, than redress of those publick Evils for which they interceded. Whilst the Kingdom was in this agitation and distemper, the *Scots*, restrained in their Trades, impoverished by the loss of many of their Ships, bereaved of all possibility of satisfying his Majesty by any naked Supplication, entred with a powerful Army into the Kingdom; and without any hostile Act or Spoil in the Countrey as they passed, more than forcing a Passage over the *Tyne* at *Newborne*, near *Newcastle*, possessed themselves of *Newcastle*; and had a fair opportunity to press on further upon the King's Army, but Duty and Reverence to his Majesty, and Brotherly Love to the *English* Nation, made them stay there; whereby the King had leisure to entertain better Counsels; wherein God so blessed and directed him, that he summoned the Great Council of Peers to meet at *Tork* upon the 24<sup>th</sup> of *September*, and there declared a Parliament to begin the Third of *November* then following. The *Scots* the first day of the great Council, presented

sented an humble Petition to his Majesty, whereupon the Treaty was appointed at *Rippon*; a present Cessation of Arms agreed upon; and the full Conclusion of all Differences referred to the Wisdom and Care of the Parliament. At our first meeting all Oppositions seemed to vanish; the mischiefs were so evident which those Evil Counsellors produced, that no man durst stand up to defend them. Yet the Work it self afforded Difficulty enough. The multiplied Evils and Corruption of Sixteen Years, strengthen'd by Custom and Authority, and the concurrent Interests of many powerful Delinquents, were now to be brought to Judgment and Reformation. The King's Household was to be provided for; they had brought him to that Want, that he could not supply his ordinary and necessary Expences, without the assistance of his People. Two Armies were to be paid, which amounted very near to Eighty thousand Pounds a Month; the People were to be tenderly charged, having been formerly exhausted with many burthensome Projects.

The difficulties seemed to be insuperable, which by the Divine Providence we have overcome. The Contrarieties incompatible,

compatible, which yet in a great measure we have reconciled. Six Subsidies have been granted, and a Bill of Poll-money; which if it be duly levied, may equal Six Subsidies more, in all Six hundred thousand Pounds. Besides, we have contracted a Debt to the *Scots*, of Two hundred and twenty thousand Pounds; and yet God hath so blessed the Endeavours of this Parliament, that the Kingdom is a great Gainer by all these Charges. The Ship-money is abolished, which cost the Kingdom above Two hundred thousand Pounds a Year. The Coat and Conduct-money, and other Military Charges, are taken away, which in many Counties amounted to little less than the Ship-money. The Monopolies are all suppressed, whereof some few did prejudice the Subject above a Million Yearly. The Soap an Hundred thousand Pounds; the Wine Three hundred thousand Pounds; the Leather must needs exceed both; and Salt could be no less than that; besides the inferior Monopolies, which if they could be exactly computed, would make up a great Sum. That, which is more beneficial than all this, That the Root of these Evils is taken away, which was,  
The

The Arbitrary Power pretended to be in his Majesty, of taxing the Subject, or charging their Estates without Consent in Parliament, which is now declared to be against Law, by the Judgment of both Houses, and likewise by an Act of Parliament. Another Step of great advantage is this; The living Grievances, the Evil Counsellors and Actors of these Mischiefs have been so quell'd by the Justice done upon the Earl of *Strafford*, the Flight of the Lord *Finch* and Secretary *Windebank*; the Accusation and Imprisonment of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, of Judge *Bartlet*, and the Impeachment of divers other Bishops and Judges; that it is like not only to be an ease to the present Times, but a preservation to the future. The discontinuance of Parliaments is prevented by the Bill for a Triennial Parliament, and the abrupt Dissolution of this Parliament by another Bill, by which it is provided it shall not be dissolved or adjourned, without the Consent of both Houses.

Which two Laws well considered, may be thought more advantageous than all the former, because they secure a full operation of the present Remedy, and afford a perpetual Spring of Remedies for the future.



future. The Star-chamber, the High-Commission, the Courts of the President, and Council in the North, were so many forges of misery, oppression, and violence and are all taken away, whereby men are more secured in their persons, liberties and estates, than they could be by any Law or Example for the regulation of those Courts, or terror of the Judges; The immoderate power of the *Council-Table*, and the excessive abuse of that power, is so ordered and restrained, that we may well hope that no such things as were frequently done by them, to the prejudice of the publick liberty, will appear in future times but only in stories, to give us and our posterity more occasion to praise God for his Majesty's goodness, and the faithful endeavours of the *Parliament*. The *Canons* and the power of *Canon-making*, are blasted by the Vote of both *Houses*. The exorbitant power of *Bishops* and their Courts are much abated, by some provisions in the Bill against the *High-Commission Court*. The Authors of the many Innovations in Doctrine and Ceremonies; The Ministers that have been scandalous in their lives, have been so terrified in just complaints and accusations, that we may well hope they will be

be more modest for the time to come; either inwardly convicted by the sight of their own folly, or outwardly restrained by the fear of punishment. The *Forests* are by a good Law reduced to their right bounds; the encroachments and oppressions of the *Stannery Courts*; The Extortions of the *Clerk* of the Market, and the compulsion of the Subject to receive the Order of Knighthood against his will, paying of Fines for not receiving it, and the vexatious proceedings thereupon for levying of those Fines, are by other beneficial Laws reformed and prevented. Many excellent Laws and provisions are in preparation for removing the inordinate power, vexation, and usurpation of *Bishops*, for reforming the pride and idleness of many of the *Clergy*, for easing the people of unnecessary Ceremonies in Religion, for censuring and removing unworthy and unprofitable Ministers; and for maintaining godly and diligent Preachers through the Kingdom; Other things of main importance for the good of this Kingdom are in proposition though little could hitherto be done, in regard of the many other more pressing businesses, which yet before the end of this Session, we hope may receive some progress

gress and perfection. The establishing and ordering the King's Revenue, that so the abuse of Officers, and superfluity of expences may be cut off, and the necessary disbursements for his Majesty's Honour, the defence and government of the Kingdom, may be more certainly provided for. The regulating of Courts of Justice, and abridging both the delays and charges of Law-Suits; The settling of some good courses for preventing the exportation of Gold and Silver, and the inequality of exchanges betwixt Us and other Nations, for the advancing of native Commodities, increase of our Manufactures, and well ballancing of Trade, whereby the Stock of the Kingdom may be increased or at least kept from impairing; as through neglect hereof it hath done for many years last past; For improving the Herring-Fishing upon our own Coasts, which will be of mighty use in the Employment of the Poor, and a plentiful Nursery of Mariners for enabling the Kingdom in any great Action. The oppositions, obstructions, and other Difficulties wherewith we have been encountred and which still lye in our way with some strength and much obstinacy are these: The malignant Party whom we have formerly

merly described to be the Actors and Promoters of all our Misery, they have taken heart again; They have been able to prefer some of their own Factors and Agents to degrees of Honour, to Places of Trust and Employment, even during the Parliament. They have endeavoured to work in his Majesty ill impressions and opinions of our Proceedings, as if we had altogether done our own work, and not his; and had obtained from him many things very prejudicial to the Crown, both in respect of Prerogative and Profit. To wipe out this Slander, we think good only to say thus much; That all that we have done, is for his Majesty, his Greatness, Honour, and Support. When we yielded to give Twenty five thousand Pounds a Month for the Relief of the *Northern* Countries, this was given to the King, for he was bound to protect his Subjects: They were his Majesty's Evil Counsellors, and their ill Instruments that were Actors in those Grievances which brought in the *Scots*. And if his Majesty please to force those who were the Authors of this War, to make satisfaction, as he might justly and easily do, it seems very reasonable that the People might well be excused from



from taking upon them this burthen, being altogether innocent and free from being any Causes of it.

When we undertook the Charge of the Army, which cost above 50,000 *l.* a Month, Was not this given to the King? Was it not his Majesty's Army? Were not all the Commanders under Contract with his Majesty at higher Rates and greater Wages than ordinary? And have not we taken upon us to discharge all the Brotherly Assistance of Three hundred thousand Pounds which we gave the Scots? Was it not toward repair of those Damages and Losses which they received from the King's Ships, and from his Ministers? These three Particulars amount to above Eleven hundred thousand Pounds: Besides, his Majesty hath received by Impositions upon Merchandise, at least Four hundred thousand Pounds; so that his Majesty hath had out of the Subjects Purse since the Parliament began, one Million and an half; and yet these men can be so impudent, as to tell his Majesty that we have done nothing for him. As to the second Branch of this Slander, we acknowledge with much Thankfulness, that his Majesty hath passed more good Bills to the advantage

rage of the Subjects, that have been in many Ages; but withal we cannot forget that these venomous Counsels did manifest themselves in some endeavours to hinder these good Acts; and for both Houses of Parliament we may with truth and modesty say thus much, That we have ever been careful not to desire any thing that should *weaken the Crown either in just profit or useful power.* The triennial Parliament, for the matter of it, doth not extend to so much as by Law we ought to have required; there being two Statutes still in force for a Parliament to be once a Year; and for the manner of it, it is in the King's power, that it shall never take effect, if he by a timely summons shall prevent any other way of assembling. In the Bill for continuance of this present Parliament, there seems to be some restraint of the Royal Power in dissolving of Parliaments, not to take it out of the Crown, but to suspend the execution of it for this time and occasion only, which was so necessary for the King's own security, and the publick Peace, that without it we could not have undertaken any of these great charges, but must have left both the Armies to disorder and confusion, and the whole  
Y Kingdom

Kingdom to blood and rapine. The Star-chamber was much more fruitful in oppression than in profit, the great fines being for the most part given away, and the rest stalled at long times. The fines of the High-Commission were in themselves unjust, and seldom or never came into the King's Purse. These four Bills are particularly and more specially instanced; in the rest there will not be found so much as a shadow of prejudice to the Crown. They have sought to diminish our reputation with the people, and to bring them out of love with Parliaments; the aspersions which they have attempted this way, have been such as these, That we have spent much time and done little, especially in those grievances which concern Religion. That the Parliament is a burthen to the Kingdom by the abundance of Protections, which hinder Justice and Trade; and by many Subsidies granted, much more heavy than any they formerly endured. To which, there is a ready Answer, if the time spent in this Parliament be considered in relation backward to the long growth and deep root of those grievances, which we have removed, to the powerful Supports of those Delinquents which we have pursued, to the  
the

the great necessities and other charges of the Commonwealth for which we have provided : or if it be considered in relation forward, to many advantages which not only the present, but future ages are like to reap by the good Laws and other proceedings in this Parliament, we doubt not but it will be thought by all indifferent Judgments, that our time hath been much better imployed than in a far greater proportion of time in many former Parliaments put together ; and the charges which have been laid upon the Subject, and the other inconveniences which they have born, will seem very light in respect of the benefit they have and may receive. And for the matter of Protections, the Parliament is so sensible of it, that therein they intend to give them whatsoever ease may stand with Honour and Justice ; and are in a way of passing a Bill to give them satisfaction. They have sought by many subtile practices, to cause jealousies and divisions betwixt us and our brethren of *Scotland*, by slandering their proceedings and intentions towards us, and by secret endeavours to instigate and incense them and us one against another. They have had such a party of Bishops and Popish Lords



in the House of Peers as hath caused much opposition and delay in the prosecution of Delinquents, hindred the proceeding of divers good Bills passed in the Commons house, concerning the reformation of sundry great abuses and corruptions both in Church and State. They have laboured to seduce and corrupt some of the Common's house, to draw them into conspiracies and combinations against the liberty of the Parliament: And by their instruments and agents they have attempted to disaffect and discontent his Majesty's Army, and to engage it for the maintenance of their wicked and traitorous designs, the keeping up of Bishops in votes and functions, and by force to compel the Parliament to order, limit and dispose their proceedings in such manner as might best concur with the intentions of this dangerous and potent faction: And when one mischievous design and attempt of theirs to bring on the Army against the Parliament, and the City of *London*, had been discovered and prevented, they presently undertook another of the same damnable nature, with this addition to it, to endeavour to make the *Scottish* Army neutral, whilst the *English* Army which they had laboured to corrupt

rupt and invenome against us by their false and slanderous suggestions, should execute their malice to the subversion of our Religion, and the dissolution of our Government. Thus they have been continually practising to disturb the peace, and plotting the destruction even of all the King's Dominions, and have employed their Emissaries and Agents in them, all for the promoting of their devillish Designs, which the vigilancy of those who were well affected hath still discovered and defeated before they were ripe for execution in *England* and *Scotland*; only in *Ireland* which was farther off, they have had time and opportunity to mould and prepare their work, and had brought it to that perfection that they had possessed themselves of that whole Kingdom, totally subverted the Government of it, rooted out Religion, and destroyed all the Protestants whom the conscience of their duty to God, their King and Countrey would not have permitted to join with them, if by God's wonderful providence their main enterprise upon the City and Castle of *Dublin*, had not been detected and prevented upon the very Eve before it should have been executed. Notwithstanding, they have in other parts

of that Kingdom broken out into open Rebellion, surprized Towns and Castles, committed Murthers, Rapes, and other Villanies, and shaken off all bonds of obedience to his Majesty, and the Laws of the Realm; and in general have kindled such a fire, as nothing but God's infinite blessing upon the Wisdom and endeavours of this State will be able to quench it: And certainly had not God in his great mercy unto this Land discovered and confounded their former designs, we had been the Prologue to this Tragedy in *Ireland*, and had by this time been made the lamentable spectacle of misery and confusion. And now what hope have we but in God? When as the only means of our subsistence, and power of Reformation is under him, in the Parliament; but what can we the Commons without the conjunction of the House of Lords, and what conjunction can we expect there, when the Bishops and Recusant Lords are so numerous and prevalent, that they are able to cross and interrupt our best endeavours for Reformation, and by that means give advantage to this malignant party to traduce our proceedings? They infuse into the People, that we mean to abolish all Church-government,

ment, and leave every man to his own fancy for the service and worship of God, absolving him of that obedience which he owes under God unto his Majesty, whom we know to be intrusted with the Ecclesiastical Law as well as with the Temporal, to regulate all the Members of the Church of *England*, by such rules of Order and Discipline as are established by Parliament, which is his great Council in all Affairs both in Church and State. We confess our intention is, and our endeavours have been to reduce within bounds that exorbitant power which the Prelates have assumed unto themselves so contrary both to the Word of God and to the Laws of the Land; to which end we past the Bill for the removing them from their temporal power and employments, that so the better they might with Meekness apply themselves to the discharge of their Functions; which Bill themselves opposed, and were the principal Instruments of crossing it.

And we do here declare, That it is far from our purpose or desire to let loose the Golden Reins of Discipline, and Government in the Church, to leave private persons or particular Congregations to take up what form of divine Service they  
Y 4                      please;



please, for we hold it requisite that there should be throughout the whole Realm a conformity to that Order which the Laws enjoyn, according to the Word of God : and we desire to unburthen the consciences of men, of needless and superstitious Ceremonies, suppress innovations, and take away the monuments of Idolatry. And the better to effect the intended Reformation, we desire there may be a general Synod of the most grave, pious, learned, and judicious Divines of this Island, assisted with some from foreign parts professing the same Religion with us, who may consider of all things necessary for the peace and good government of the Church, and represent the results of their consultations unto the Parliament, to be there allowed of and confirmed, and receive the stamp of authority, thereby to find passage and obedience throughout the Kingdom. They have maliciously charged us that we intend to destroy and discourage Learning ; whereas it is our chiefest care and desire to advance it, and to provide a competent maintenance for conscionable and preaching Ministers throughout the Kingdom ; which will be a great encouragement to Scholars, and a certain means whereby the want, mean-

meanness, and ignorance, to which a great part of the Clergy is now subject, will be prevented. And we intend likewise to reform, and purge the Fountains of Learning, the two Universities, that the streams flowing from thence may be clear and pure, and an honour and comfort to the whole Land. They have strained to blast our proceedings in Parliament, by wresting the Interpretations of our Orders from their genuine intention. They tell the people that our meddling with the power of Episcopacy, hath caused Secteries and Conventicles; when Idolatry and Popish Ceremonies introduced into the Church by the command of the Bishops, have not only debarred the people from thence, but expelled them from the Kingdom. Thus with *Elijah* we are called by this malignant party the troublers of the State; and still while we endeavour to reform their abuses, they make us the Authors of those mischiefs we study to prevent. For the perfecting of the work begun, and removing all future impediments, we conceive these courses will be very effectual, seeing the Religion of the Papists hath such principles as do certainly tend to the destruction and extirpation of all Protestants when  
they

they shall have opportunity to effect it.

It is necessary in the first place to keep them in such condition, as that they may not be able to do us any hurt, and for avoiding of such connivance and favour as hath heretofore been shewed unto them. That his Majesty be pleased to grant a standing Commission to some choice men named in Parliament, who may take notice of their increase, their counsels and proceedings; and use all due means by execution of the Laws, to prevent any mischievous designs against the peace and safety of this Kingdom. That some good course be taken to discover the counterfeit and false conformity of Papists to the Church; by colour whereof Persons very much disaffected to the true Religion have been admitted into places of greatest authority and trust in the Kingdom.

For the better preservation of the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, that all illegal grievances and exactions be presented and punished at the Sessions, and Assizes; and that Judges and Justices be careful to give this in charge to the Grand Jury, and both the Sheriff and Justices to be sworn to the due execution of the  
Peti<sup>r</sup>

Petition of Right and other Laws: That his Majesty be humbly Petitioned by both Houses to employ such Counsellors, Ambassadors, and other Ministers, in managing his business at home and abroad, as the Parliament may have cause to confide in; without which we cannot give his Majesty such supplies for support of his own estate, nor such assistance to the Protestant Party beyond the Sea, as is desired. It may often fall out that the Commons may have just cause to take exceptions at some men for being Counsellors, and yet not charge those men with Crimes, for there be grounds of diffidence which lye not in proof; there are others which tho they may be proved, yet are not legally criminal. To be a known favourer of Papists, or to have been very forward in defending or countenancing some great offenders questioned in Parliament; or to speak contemptuously of either Houses of Parliament, or Parliamentary proceedings; or such as are Factors or Agents for any Foreign Prince of another Religion; such as are justly suspected to get Counsellor's places or any other of trust concerning publick employments, for Money: For all these and divers others we may have great reason



son to be earnest with his Majesty not to put his great Affairs into such hands, though we may be unwilling to proceed against them in any legal way of charge or impeachment. That all Councillors of State may be sworn to observe those Laws which concern the Subject in his liberty; that they may likewise take an Oath not to receive or give Reward or Pension from any Foreign Prince, but such as they within some reasonable time discover to the Lords of his Majesty's Council: And although they should wickedly forswear themselves, yet it may herein do good to make them known to be false and perjured to those who employ them, and thereby bring them into as little credit with them as with us. That his Majesty may have cause to be in love with good Counsel and good men, by shewing him in an humble and dutiful manner, how full of advantage it would be to himself, to see his own Estate settled in a plentiful condition to support his honour, to see his People united in ways of duty to him, and endeavours of the publick good; to see Happiness, Wealth, Peace and Safety derived to his own Kingdom, and procured to his Allies by the influence of his own power and government.

vernment. That all good courses may be taken to unite the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, to be mutually aiding and assisting one another for the common good of the Island, and honour of both. To take away all differences amongst our selves for matters indifferent in their own nature concerning Religion, and to unite our selves against the common enemies, which are the better enabled by our divisions to destroy us all, as they hope and have often endeavoured. To labour by all offices of friendship to unite the Foreign Churches with us in the same cause, and to seek their liberty, safety, and prosperity, as bound thereunto both by charity to them, and by wisdom for our own good. For by this means our own strength shall be encreased, and by a mutual concurrence to the same common end, we shall be enabled to procure the good of the whole body of the Protestant Profession. If these things may be observed, we doubt not but God will crown this Parliament with such success as shall be the beginning and foundation of more honour and happiness to his Majesty, than ever yet was enjoyed by any of his Royal Predecessors.

*His*

*His Majesty's Answer to the Petition which accompanied the Declaration presented to him at Hampton-Court, Dec. 1. 1641.*

**W**E having received from you soon after our return out of *Scotland*, a long Petition, consisting of many desires of great moment; together with a Declaration of a very unusual nature annexed thereunto; We had taken some time to consider of it, as befitted Us in a manner of that consequence, being confident, that your own reason and regard to Us, as well as our express intimation by our Comptroller to that purpose, would have restrained you from the publishing of it, till such time as you should have received our Answer to it: But, much against our expectation, finding the contrary, that the said Declaration is already abroad in Print, by directions from your House, as appears by the printed Copy: We must let you know, that we are very sensible of the disrespect. Notwithstanding, it is our intention, that no failing on your part, shall make us fail in ours, of giving all due satisfaction to the desires of our People in a Parliamentary way; And therefore we send you

you this Answer to your Petition, reserving our self in point of the Declaration, which we think unparliamentary, and shall take a course to do that which we shall think fit in prudence and honour.

To the Petition we say, that altho there are divers things in the Preamble of it, which we are so far from admitting, that we profess we cannot at all understand them, as, *Of a wicked and malignant party prevalent in the Government; Of some of that party admitted to our privy Council, and to other Employments of trust, and nearest to Us and our Children; Of Endeavours to sow among the People false scandals and imputations, to blemish and disgrace the proceedings of the Parliament:* All, or any of which, did we know of, we should be as ready to remedy and punish, as you to complain of. That the prayers of your Petition are grounded upon such premisses as we must in no wise admit; yet notwithstanding we are pleased to give this Answer to you.

To the first, concerning Religion, consisting of several branches, we say, That for the preserving the peace and safety of this Kingdom from the designs of the Popish party, we have, and will still con-

cur



cur with all the just desires of our people in a Parliamentary way. That for the depriving of the Bishops of their Votes in Parliament, We would have you consider, that their right is grounded upon the fundamental Law of the Kingdom, and constitution of Parliament. This we would have you consider; but since you desire our concurrence herein in a Parliamentary way, we will give no further answer at this time.

As for the abridging of the inordinate power of the Clergy, we conceive that the taking away of the High-Commission Court hath well moderated that; but if there continue any Usurpations, or Excesses in their Jurisdictions, we therein neither have nor will protect them.

Unto that Clause which concerneth Corruptions (as you stile them) in Religion, in Church-Government, and in Discipline, and the removing of such unnecessary Ceremonies as weak Consciences might cheque at; That for any illegal Innovations, which may have crept in, we shall willingly concur in the removal of them. That if our Parliament shall advise us to call a National Synod, which may duly examine such Ceremonies as give just cause of offence to any,  
we

we shall take it into consideration, and apply our self to give due satisfaction therein: But we are very sorry to hear in such general terms; Corruption in Religion objected, since we are perswaded in our conscience that no Church can be found upon the earth that professeth the true Religion with more purity of Doctrine than the Church of *England* doth, nor where the Government and Discipline are joyntly more beautified, and free from Superstition, than as they are here established by Law; which (by the grace of God) we will with constancy maintain (while we live) in their Purity and Glory, not only against all invasions of Popery, but also from the irreverence of those many Schismaticks and Separatists, wherewith of late this Kingdom and this City abounds, to the great dishonour and hazard both of Church and State: for the suppression of whom we require your timely aid and active assistance.

To the second prayer of the Petition, concerning the removal and choice of Councillors, we know not any of our Council to whom the Character set forth in the Petition can belong. That by those whom we had exposed to tryal, we have already given you sufficient testimony,  
Z that

that there is no man so near unto us in place or affection, whom we will not leave to the Justice of the Law, if you shall bring a particular charge, and sufficient proofs against him; and of this we do again assure you: but in the mean time we wish you to forbear such general aspersions as may reflect upon all our Council, since you name none in particular.

That for the choice of our Councillors and Ministers of State, it were to debar us that natural liberty all Freemen have; and it is the undoubted right of the Crown of *England*, to call such persons to our Secret Councils, to publick employment, and our particular service, as we shall think fit, so we are, and ever shall be very careful to make election of such persons in those places of trust, as shall have given good testimonies of their abilities and integrity, and against whom there can be no just cause of exception, whereon reasonably to ground a diffidence; and to choices of this nature, we assure you that the mediation of the nearest unto us hath always concurred.

To the third Prayer of your Petition, concerning *Ireland*, we understand your desire of not alienating the forfeited Lands thereof,

thereof, to proceed from your much care and love ; And likewise that it may be a Resolution very fit for us to take ; but whither it be reasonable to declare Resolutions of that nature before the events of a War be seen, that we much doubt of. Howsoever, we cannot but thank you for this care, and your chearful engagement for the suppression of that Rebellion ; upon the speedy effecting thereof, the glory of God in the Protestant Profession, the safety of the *British* there, our honour, and that of the Nation so much depends ; all the Interests of this Kingdom being so involved in that business, we cannot but quicken your affections therein, and shall desire you to frame your Councils, and to give such expedition to the work, as the nature thereof, and the pressures in point of time require, and whereof you are put in mind by the daily insolence and encrease of those Rebels.

For Conclusion, your promise to apply your selves to such courses as may support our Royal Estate with Honour and Plenty at home, and with Power and Reputation abroad, is that which we have ever promised our self, both from your Loyalties and Affections, and also



for what we have already done, and shall daily go adding unto for the comfort and happiness of our People.

---

*His Majesty's Declaration to all his loving Subjects. Published with the advice of His Privy Council.*

**A**Lthough we do not believe that our House of Commons intended, by their Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom, to put us to any Apology either for our past or present Actions; Notwithstanding, since they have thought it so very necessary (upon their Observation of the present Distemper) to publish the same, for the satisfaction of all our loving Subjects, We have thought it very suitable to the Duty of our place (with which God hath trusted us) to do our part to so good a work; in which we shall not think it below our Kingly dignity to descend to any particular, which may compose and settle the Affections of our meanest Subjects; since we are so conscious to our self of such upright Intentions and endeavours, and only of such (for which we give God thanks) for the peace and happiness of our Kingdom,

in

in which the prosperity of our Subjects must be included, that we wish from our heart, that even our most secret thoughts were published to their view and examination. Though we must confess we cannot but be very sorry in this conjuncture of time (when the unhappiness of this Kingdom is so generally understood abroad) there should be such a necessity of publishing so many particulars, from which, we pray, no inconveniences may ensue that were not intended.

We shall in few words pass over that part of the Narrative, wherein the Misfortunes of this Kingdom from our first entering to the Crown, to the beginning of this Parliament, are remembered in so sensible expressions; And that other which acknowledgeth the many good Laws passed by our Grace and Favour this Parliament for the Security of our people; Of which we shall only say thus much, That as we have not refused to pass any Bill presented to us by our Parliament, for redress of those Grievances mentioned in the Remonstrance, so we have not had a greater Motive for the passing of those Laws than our own Resolution (grounded upon our Observation, and understanding the State of our King-

dom) to have free'd our Subjects for the future, from those Pressures which were grievous to them, if those Laws had not been propounded; which therefore we shall as inviolably maintain, as we look to have our own Rights preserved; not doubting but all our loving Subjects will look on those Remedies, with that full gratitude and affection, that even the memory of what they had formerly undergone by the Accidents and Necessities of those times, will not be unpleasant to them: And possibly in a pious sence of God's blessing upon this Nation (how little share soever we shall have of the acknowledgment) they will confess they have enjoyed a great measure of happiness (even the last sixteen Years) both in peace and plenty, not only comparatively in respect of their Neighbours, but even of those times which were justly accounted Fortunate.

The Fears and Jealousies which may make some impression in the minds of our People, we will suppose may be of two sorts; either for Religion, or Liberty, and their Civil Interests. The fears for Religion may haply be, not only as ours here established may be invaded by the *Romish* party, but as it is accompani-  
ed

ed with some Ceremonies, at which some tender Consciences really are, or pretend to be scandalized; for of any other which have been used without any legal Warrant or Injunction, and already are, or speedily may be abolished, we shall not speak.

Concerning Religion, as there may be any suspicion of favour or inclination to the Papists, we are willing to declare to all the World, That as we have been from our Childhood brought up in, and practised the Religion now established in this Kingdom, so it is well known, we have (not contented simply with the Principles of our Education) given a good proportion of our time and pains, to the examination of the grounds of this Religion, as it is different from that of *Rome*, and are from our Soul so fully satisfied and assured, that it is the most pure and agreeable to the Sacred Word of God, of any Religion now practised in the Christian World; That as we believe we can maintain the same by unanswerable Reasons, so we hope we should *readily seal to it by the effusion of our Blood, if it pleas'd God to call us to that sacrifice.* And therefore nothing can be so acceptable unto us, as any proposition which may



contribute to the advancement of it here, or the propagation of it abroad; being the only means to draw down a blessing from God upon our selves, and this Nation. And we have been extreamly unfortunate, if this profession of ours be wanting to our People: our constant practice in our own Person, having always been (without ostentation) as much to the evidence of our care and duty herein, as we could possibly tell how to express.

For differences amongst our selves, for matters indifferent in their own nature, concerning Religion, we shall, in tenderness to any number of our loving Subjects, very willingly comply with the advice of our Parliament; that some Law may be made for the exemptions of tender Consciences from punishment, or prosecution for such Ceremonies, and in such cases which by the judgment of most men, are held to be matters indifferent, and of some to be absolutely unlawful. Provided that this ease be attempted, and persued with that modesty, temper and submission, that in the mean time the peace and quiet of the Kingdom be not disturbed, the decency, and comeliness of God's service discountenanced, nor the pious, sober, and devout actions  
of

of those Reverend Persons, who were the first favourers in the blessed Reformation, or of that time, be scandal'd and defamed. For we cannot without grief of heart, and without some tax upon our Self, and our Ministers for the not execution of our Laws, look upon the bold License of some men, in Printing of Pamphlets, in Preaching and Printing of Sermons, so full of bitterness and malice against the present Government, against the Laws established; so full of Sedition against our Self, and the peace of the Kingdom; that we are many times amazed to consider by what Eyes these things are seen, and by what Ears they are heard: And therefore we have good cause to command, as we have done, and hereby do, all our Judges and Ministers of Justice, Our Attorney and Solicitor General, and the rest of our learned Council, to proceed with all speed against such, and their Abettors, who either by writing or words, have so boldly and maliciously violated the Laws, disturbed the peace of the Commonwealth; and as much as in them lies, shaken the very foundation upon which the Peace and Happiness is founded and constituted. And we doubt not but all  
our

our loving Subjects, will be very sensible that this busy, virulent demeanour is a fit Prologue to nothing but confusion; and if not very seasonably punished and prevented, will not only be a blemish to that wholesome accommodation we intend, but an unspeakable scandal and imputation, even upon the profession and Religion of this our Kingdom of *England*.

Concerning the Civil Liberties and Interests of our Subjects, we shall need to say the less, having erected so many lasting Monuments of our Princely and Fatherly care of our People, in those many excellent Laws passed by us this Parliament, which in truth (with very much content to our Self) we conceive to be so large and ample, that very many sober Men have very little left to wish for.

We understood well the Right, and pretences of Right, departed we from in the consenting to the Bills of the Triennial Parliament, for the continuance of this present Parliament, and in the preamble to the Bill of Tunnage and Poundage; the matter of which having begot so many disturbances in late Parliaments, we are willing to remove, that no interest of ours might hereafter break that  
corre-

correspondence; abundantly contenting our Self with an Assurance (which we still have) that we should be repaired and supplied by a just proportion of confidence, bounty and obedience of our people. In the Bills for the taking away the High-Commission and Star-Chamber Courts, we believed we had given that real Satisfaction, that all jealousies and apprehensions of Arbitrary pressures under the Civil or Ecclesiastical state, would easily have been abandoned, especially when they saw all possible doubts secured by the Visitation of a triennial Parliament.

These, and others of no mean consideration, we had rather should be valued in the hearts and affections of our people, than in any mention of our own; not doubting, but as we have taken all these occasions to render their condition most comfortable and happy, so they will always in a grateful and dutiful relation, be ready with equal tenderness and alacrity, to advance our Rights, and preserve our Honour, upon which their own security and subsistence so much depends. And we will be so careful, that no particular shall be presented unto us for the compleating and establishing that security, to which we will not with the  
same



same readiness contribute our best assistance.

If these resolutions be the effects of our present Councils, (and we take God to witness that they are such, and that all our loving Subjects may confidently expect the benefit of them from us) certainly no ill design upon the Publick can accompany such Resolutions; neither will there be greater cause of suspicion of any Persons preferred by us to degrees of Honour, and Places of trust and employment since this Parliament. And we must confess, that among our misfortunes, we reckon it not the least, that having not retained in our Service, nor protected any one person, against whom our Parliament hath excepted during the whole sitting of it, and having in all that time scarce vouchsafed to any man an instance of our Grace and Favour, but to such who were under such eminent characters of Estimation amongst our People, there should so soon be any mis-understanding or jealousy of their fidelity and uprightness; especially in a time when we take all occasions to declare, That we conceive our self only capable of being served by honest Men, and in honest ways. However, if in truth we have been mistaken in  
such

such our election, the particular shall be no sooner discovered to us, either by our own observation, or other certain information, than we will leave them to publick Justice under the marks of our displeasure.

If notwithstanding this, any malignant party shall take heart, and be willing to sacrifice the Peace and Happiness of their Countrey to their own sinister ends and ambitions, under what pretence of Religion and Conscience soever. If they shall endeavour to lessen our Reputation and Interest, and to weaken our lawful Power and Authority with our good Subjects; if they shall go about by discountenancing the present Laws to loosen the Bonds of Government, that all disorder and confusion may break in upon us, we doubt not but God in his good time will discover them unto us, and the Wisdom and Courage of our High Court of Parliament join with us in their suppression and punishment.

Having now said all that we can to express the clearness and uprightness of our Intentions to our People, and done all we can to manifest those Intentions, we cannot but confidently believe all our good Subjects will acknowledge our part to be  
fully

fully performed, both in deeds past, and present Resolutions, to do whatsoever with Justice may be required of us; and that their quiet and prosperity depends now wholly upon themselves and is in their own power, by yielding all obedience and due reverence to the Law, which is the inheritance of every Subject, and the only security he can have for his Life, Liberty or Estate; and the which being neglected or disesteemed (under what specious shews soever) a very great measure of infelicity, if not irreparable confusion must without doubt fall upon them. And we doubt not it will be the most acceptable Declaration a King can make to his Subjects, That for our part we are resolved not only duly to observe the Laws our Self, but to maintain them against what opposition soever, though with the hazard of our Being.

And our hope is, that not only the Loyalty and good Affections of all our loving Subjects, will concur with us in the constant preserving a good understanding between us and our people, but at this time their own and our interest, and compassion of the lamentable condition of our poor Protestant Subjects in Ireland, will invite them to a fair intelligence

gence and unity amongst themselves, that so we may with one heart intend the relieving and recovering that unhappy Kingdom, where those barbarous Rebels practice such inhuman and unheard-of Outrages upon our miserable people, that no Christian Ear can hear without horror, nor story parallel. And as we look upon this as the greatest affliction it hath pleased God to lay upon us, so our unhappiness is encreased, in that by the distempers at home, so early remedies have not been applied to those growing evils, as the expectation and necessity there requires; though for our part, as we did upon the first notice acquaint our Parliament of *Scotland*, (where we then were) with that Rebellion, requiring their aid and assistance, and gave like speedy intimation and recommendation to our Parliament here; so since our return hither, we have been forward to do all things which have been proposed to us towards that work, and have lately our Self offered (by a Message to our House of Peers, and communicated to our House of Commons) to take upon us the care to raise speedily 10,000 *English* Voluntiers for that service, if the House of Commons shall declare that they will pay them; which



which particulars we are (in a manner) necessitated to publish, since we are informed that the malice of some persons hath whispered it abroad, That the no speedier advancing of this business hath proceeded from some want of alacrity in us to this great work; whereas we acknowledge it a high crime against Almighty God, and inexcusable to our good Subjects of our three Kingdoms, if we did not to the utmost employ all our powers and faculties to the speediest and most effectual assistance and protection of that distressed people.

And we shall now conjure all our good Subjects of what degree soever) by all the Bonds of Love, Duty, or Obedience, that are precious to good men, to join with us for the Recovery of the peace of that Kingdom, and the preservation of the peace of this; to remove all their doubts and Fears, which may interrupt their affection to us, and all their jealousies and apprehensions which may lessen their charity to each other; and then if the sins of this Nation have not prepared an inevitable Judgment for us all) God will yet make us a great and glorious King, over a free and happy people.

NUMB.

N U M B. X.

A Fatal Letter of the Marquis of *Montrose* to King *Charles I*; deliver'd during the Treaty of *Uxbridge*. Memoirs, P. 78.

An ORIGINAL.

May it please your Sacred Majesty,

**T**HE last Dispatch I sent your Majesty, was by my worthy Friend, and your Majesty's brave Servant Sir William Rollock, from Kintore near Aberdeen dated the 14th of September last; wherein I acquainted your Majesty with the good Success of your Arms in this Kingdom, and of the Battles the Justice of your Cause has won over your obdur'd Rebel Subjects. Since Sir William Rollock went, I have travers'd all the North of Scotland, up to Argyle's Countrey; who durst not stay my coming, or I should have given your Majesty a good account of him e'er now. But at last I have met with him yesterday to his Cost: Of which your gracious Majesty be pleas'd to receive the following Particulars:

A a

After

*After I had laid waste the whole Countrey of Argyle, and brought off Provisions for my Army of what could be found, I receiv'd information, That Argyle was got together with a considerable Army, made up chiefly of his own Clan [Family], and Vassals, and Tenants, with others of the Rebels that join'd him; and that he was at Innerlochy, where he expected the Earl of Seaforth, and the Sept [the Family] of the Fraziers, to come up to him with all the Forces they could get together, Upon this Intelligence I departed out of Argyleshire, and march'd through Lorn, Glencow, and Aber, till I came to Lochness; my design being to fall upon Argyle, before Seaforth and the Fraziers could join him. My March was through inaccessible Mountains, where I could have no Guides but Cow-herds, and they scarce acquainted with a place but Six Miles from their own habitations. If I had been attack'd but with an hundred men in some of these Passes, I must have certainly return'd back, for it would have been impossible to force my way, most of the Passes being so streight, that Three Men could not march a breast. I was willing to let the World see that Argyle was not the Man his High-land Men believed him to be; and that it was possible to beat him in his own High-lands.*

lands. The difficultest March of all was over the Lochaber Mountains, which we at last surmounted, and came upon the back of the Enemy when they least expected us, having cut off some Scouts we met about four Miles from Innerlochy. Our Van came within view of them about five a Clock in the Afternoon, and we made a Halt till our Rear was got up, which could not be done till Eight at Night. The Rebels took the Alarm, and stood to their Arms as well as we, all Night, which was Moon-light, and very clear. There were some few Skirmishes between the Rebels and Us all the Night, and with no loss on our side, but one Man. By break of day I order'd my Men to be ready to fall on upon the first Signal; and I understand since by the Prisoners, the Rebels did the same. A little after the Sun was up, both Armies met, and the Rebels fought for some time with great Bravery; the Prime of the Campbells giving the first Onset, as Men that deserv'd to fight in a better Cause. Our Men having a Nobler Cause, did wonders, and came immediately to push of Pike, and dint of Sword, after their first firing. The Rebels could not stand it, but after some Resistance at first, began to run; whom we persued for Nine Miles together, making a great

A a 2      slaughter;



slaughter; which I would have hindred, if possible, that I might save your Majesty's mis-led Subjects; for well I know your Majesty does not delight in their Blood, but in their returning to their Duty. There were at least Fifteen hundred kill'd in the Battel, and the Pursuit; among whom there are a great many of the most considerable Gentlemen of the Name of Campbell, and some of them nearly related to the Earl. I have sav'd and taken Prisoners several of them, that have acknowledg'd to me their fault, and lay all the blame on their Chief. Some Gentlemen of the Low-lands, that had behav'd themselves bravely in the Battel, when they saw all lost, fled into the Old Castle, and upon their Surrender I have treated them honourably, and taken their Parole never to bear Arms against your Majesty. [Here are Six or Seven Lines, that for the Honour of some families, are better left out than mention'd.] We have of your Majesty's Army about Two hundred wounded, but I hope few of them dangerously. I can hear but of four kill'd, and one whom I cannot name to your Majesty, but with grief of Mind, Sir Thomas Ogilvy, a Son of the Earl of Arly's, of whom I writ to your Majesty in my last. He is not yet dead, but they say he cannot possibly live.

live ; and we give him over for dead. Your Majesty had never a truer Servant, nor there never was a braver, honest Gentleman. For the rest of the Particulars of this Action, I refer my self to the Bearer, Mr. Hay, whom your Majesty knows already, and therefore I need not recommend him.

Now, Sacred Sir, let me humbly intreat your Majesty's Pardon, if I presume to write you my poor Thoughts and Opinion about what I hear'd by a Letter I receiv'd from my Friends in the South last Week, as if your Majesty was entring into a Treaty with your Rebel Parliament in England. The Success of your Arms in Scotland does not more rejoice my heart, as that News from England is like to break it. And whatever come of me, I will speak my mind freely to your Majesty ; for it's not mine, but your Majesty's Interest I seek. When I had the honour of waiting upon your Majesty last, I told you at full length what I fully understood of the Designs of your Rebel Subjects in both Kingdoms, which I had occasion to know, as much as any one whatsoever, being at that time, as they thought, entirely in their Interest. Your Majesty may remember how much you said you were convinc'd I was in the right in my opinion.

of them. I am sure there is nothing fallen out since, to make your Majesty change your Judgment in all those things I laid before your Majesty at that time. The more your Majesty grants, the more will be ask'd; and I have too much reason to know that they will not rest satisfied with less than making your Majesty a King of Straw. I hope the News I have receiv'd about a Treaty, may be a Mistake; and the rather, that the Letter wherewith the Queen was pleas'd to honour me, dated the 30th of December, mentions no such thing. Yet I know not what to make of the Intelligence I receiv'd, since it comes from Sir Robert Spotswood, who writes it with a great Regret; and it's no wonder, considering no man living is a more true Subject to your Majesty, than he. Forgive me, Sacred Sovereign, to tell your Majesty, That in my poor Opinion it is unworthy of a King, to treat with Rebel Subjects while they have the Sword in their hands. And though God forbid I should stint your Majesty's Mercy, yet I must declare the Horror I am in, when I think of a Treaty, while your Majesty and they are in the Field with Two Armies; unless they disband, and submit themselves entirely to your Majesty's Goodness and Pardon. As to the State of Affairs in this Kingdom,

the

*the bearer will fully inform your Majesty in every particular. And give me leave with all humility to assure your Majesty, That through God's Blessing I am in the fairest hopes of reducing this Kingdom to your Majesty's Obedience. And if the Measures I have concerted with your other Loyal Subjects, fail me not, which they hardly can, I doubt not but before the End of this Summer I shall be able to come to your Majesty's Assistance with a brave Army; which, back'd with the Justice of your Majesty's Cause, will make the Rebels in England as well as in Scotland, feel the just Rewards of Rebellion. Only give me leave, after I have reduc'd this Countrey to your Majesty's Obedience, and conquer'd from Dan to Beer-sheba, to say to your Majesty then, as David's General did to his Master, Come thou thy self lest this Countrey be call'd by my Name: For in all my Actions I aim only at your Majesty's Honour and Interest, as becomes one that is to his last Breath,*

May it please your Sacred Majesty,

Innerlochy in Lochaber, Feb. 3.  
1645.

Your Majesty's most Humble,  
most Faithful, and most Obedient Subject and Servant,

MONTROSS.

A a 4

NUMB.



Memoirs,  
p. 123.

NUMB. XI.

*The Address of General Monk and his Officers from Scotland, to the Parliament of England, against Monarchy, upon Richard Cromwell's Abdication.*

*Right Honourable,*

*Whitlock's*  
Memoirs,  
p. 679.  
680.

THAT a Nation may be born in a day, is a truth which this day's experience witnesseth unto us against all the dictates of humane Reason; and that a glorious Cause whose Interest was laid low (even in the dust) should be in one day restored to its life and lustre, when almost all the Asserters of it had so manifestly declined it by a defection of many years, cannot be imputed to less than the greatest and most powerful manifestation of the Arm of God, that ever this, or former Generations saw, or heard of.

In the sense of this (the greatest of our Temporal Mercies) we now come to address to your Honours, as those whose presence we have so long wanted, that had you staid but a little longer, it might have been left to be enquired what

Eng-

*England* was; we mean, what was become of that People, by whom God for so many years filled the World with so much admiration and terror. But though this great Work be (as most justly it ought to be) wonderful in our eyes, yet when we consider its Author, who calls things that are not, as if they were, bringeth down to the Pit, and raiseth up again; we see that nothing is difficult to Faith, and the Promises of God are sure and stable, even then, when in the eye of Man no less than impossible.

We cannot but acknowledge to our exceeding great sorrow and shame, that our selves (though we hope most of us, through weakness and frailty, not out of design) have very much contributed to those Provocations, which have caused God to depart from our *Israel*; and we could heartily wish that even amongst those that help to make up your own number, there had not been an helping hand to this sad and deplorable work: But we see when God's hour is come, and the time of his people's deliverance (even the set time is at hand) he cometh skipping over all the Mountains of Sin and Unworthiness that we daily cast in the way.

We

Richard  
Cromwell.

We are not willing to detain your Honours too long upon this Subject; and therefore beseeching the God of all our Mercies, to heal the backslidings of his people, and not to charge unto their account, in this his day of their deliverance, their miscarriages, whilst they were wandering in dark and slippery places, after the imaginations of their own hearts: we with all humility and affection in the first place congratulate you in this your happy Restoration to the Government of these Nations, which God was pleased once so to own in your hands, as to make you both the praise and wonder of the Earth, the glory and rejoicing of his People, and the terror of your Adversaries; and we acknowledge it a singular condescension in you, in this day of so great difficulties, to take upon you so heavy a burthen. And seeing his late Highness hath been pleased to manifest so much self-denial and love to his Countrey, in appearing for the Interest thereof against his own; we humbly intreat that some speedy care may be taken for him and his family, (together with her Highness Dowager) that there may be such an honourable Provision settled upon them, and such other Dignities as are suitable to  
the

the former great Services of that Family to these Nations.

And in the next place we cannot but humbly beseech you, now you have an opportunity, than which a fitter your hearts did never pray for, to finish the work of Reformation that hath been so long upon the wheel, and met with so great Obstructions; that you would not heal the wound of the daughter of God's people slightly, but make so sure and lasting provision for both their Christian and Civil Rights, as that both this and future Generations may have cause to rise up, and call you Blessed, and the blackest of Designs may never be able to cast dirt in your faces any more. And as helpful to these two great Concernments, *Religion* and *Liberty*, we humbly propose unto your mature considerations these two Desires :

First, that you would be pleased to countenance Godliness, and all the sincere professors thereof, encourage an able and laborious Ministry, and suffer no other Yoak to be imposed upon the Consciences of God's people, than what may be agreeable to the Word of God : and that you would be a terror to all impious, prophane, and licentious people whatsoever.

Second-



Secondly that you would so vindicate and assert the Native Rights and Liberties of these Nations, in and by the Government of a *Free-State*, that there may not be the voice of an oppressed one in our Land, but that all may enjoy the blessed fruits of your righteous and peaceable Government. And for the prevention of all possibility for ambitious Spirits ever to work their ends against you; we humbly desire you to be very careful, as well what persons you entrust with the management of the Armies and Navies of this Commonwealth, as of the measure of that Power and Authority you depart with to them, or substitute in them. Touching the qualifications of the Persons, we desire they may be truly godly and conscientious. Touching the measure of their Authority, that it may be adequate to the nature and being of a *Commonwealth*. And whilst you are thus pleading, and asserting the Interest of God and his People, you may rest assured with greatest confidence, that we shall appear in your defence, and the vindication of your Authority, against the opposition of all Arbitrary Powers whatsoever.

And to that blessed and All-powerful  
God

God, who is able to spirit you for this great work ; you are, and shall daily be recommended in the prayers of,

Your most loyal and most  
Obedient Servants,

George Monk.

Thomas Read.

Ralph Cobbet.

Tim. Wilks.

Robert Read.

John Cloberry.

Abra. Holmes.

Henr. Dorney.

Dan. Davison.

Rich. Heath.

Mi. Richardson.

J. Hubbelthorn.

Tho. Johnson.

P. Crisp.

He. Brithman.

Phil. Watson

Tho. Dean.

Jerem. Smith.

Will. Davis.

James Right.

Jos. Wallinton.

Will. Helling.

Ethelb. Morgan.

Rob. Winter.

John Paddon.

Anthony Nowers.

The

The Form of the Declaration and Engagement taken by General *Monk* and his Officers, against Monarchy, and the Family of the *Stuarts*, at his coming up from *Scotland*.

*Whitlock's*  
Memoirs,  
p. 684.

**I** A. B. do hereby declare, That I do renounce the pretended Title of Charles Stuart, and the whole Line of the late King James, and of every other person as a single person, pretending to the Government of these Nations of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and the Dominions and Territories thereunto belonging: And that I will by the grace and assistance of Almighty God, be true, faithful and constant to this Commonwealth, against any King, single person, and House of Peers, and every of them; and hereunto I subscribe my Name.

NUMB.

## NUMB. XII.

Memoirs,  
p. 162.

*King James the II<sup>d</sup>'s promising Speech to  
the Parliament, May 30. 1685.*

*My Lords and Gentlemen,*

**I** Thank you very heartily for the Bill you have presented me this Day; and I assure you, the Readiness and Chearfulness that hath attended the Dispatch of it, is as acceptable to me as the Bill it self.

After so happy a beginning, you may believe I would not call upon you unnecessarily for an extraordinary Supply: But when I tell you the Stores of the Navy are extreamly exhausted; That the Anticipations upon several Branches of the Revenue are great and burthensome; and the Debts of the King my Brother, to his Servants and Family, are such as deserve Compassion; That the Rebellion in Scotland, without putting more Weight upon it than it really deserves, must oblige me to a considerable expence Extraordinary. I am sure such Considerations will move you to give me an Aid to provide for those things,



things, wherein the Security, the Ease, and the Happiness of my Government are so much concern'd. But above all, I must recommend to you the Care of the Navy, the Strength and Glory of this Nation; That you will put it into such a Condition, *as will make us considerable and respected abroad.* I cannot express my Concerns upon this occasion more suitable to my own Thoughts of it, than by assuring you I have a true *English* Heart, as jealous of the Honour of the Nation as you can be: And I please myself with the hopes, that by God's Blessing and your Assistance, I may carry its Reputation yet higher in the World, than ever it has been in the time of any of my Ancestors.

And as I will not call upon you for Supplies, but when they are of publick Use and Advantage, so I promise you, That what you give me upon such Occasions, shall be managed with good Husbandry: And I will take care it shall be employed to the Uses for which I ask them.

NUMB.

NUMB. XIII.

Memoirs;  
p. 164.

Two remarkable Letters of a Foreign Minister to their Ambassador in *England*, relating to King *James's* preceeding Speech. *Translated from the Originals.*

Paris, June 29. 1685.

Monfieur,

**T**HE Copy of his B. M.'s Speech to the Parliament, inclos'd in yours of the 9th Instant, S. V. affords sufficient matter of thoughts here. It is of a strain that looks quite contrary to what we expected, or what you your self in yours of the 11th of the last Month made us believe it would be. The King can scarce believe there is any Change in the Affections of that Prince towards him, and yet knows not what to make of that new Manner of expressing himself on so publick an Occasion. If he and his Parliament come to a cordial Trust in one another, it may probably change all the Measures we have been so long concerting, for the Glory of our Monarch, and the Establishment of the Catholick Religion. For my own part, I hope the Accession of a Crown

B b

has

has not lessen'd the Zeal that on all occasions appear'd in him, when but Duke of York. Nor will the King's inviolable attachment to the Interest of the Duke in the most difficult Emergents, permit him now, when King, to forget his Obligations and Engagements to him. There is better things to be hop'd for, from one that has run so great hazards upon the account of his Religion, and who has so often express'd his Resentments of the good turns the King did him in his Brother's Life-time.

Tet it's fit you take all possible care to search into the Motives and Advisers of this Speech: And I am commanded to tell you, That this is one of the greatest pieces of Service you can do his Majesty in this Juncture. There are not wanting some here that would attribute it to a Change in the King of England's Inclinations, and they pretend to have Hints of it from some about his Person; What truth is in this Suggestion, you are to spare nothing to find out. If the Parliament come once to settle a Revenue upon him, such as may put him out of our Reverence, your business there will be the more difficult to manage; for doubtless he must have ambition, and likewise a desire to please a Nation, who had but an ill opinion of him before: And nothing can be  
more

more taking with them, than a breach with us. It will be strange indeed, if in the Death of King Charles, France has chang'd for the worse. But whatever others fear, I must once more confess for my self, That I am of the same opinion I was always of, even that we must necessarily gain by the Change. Your Bills are sent this Post. Nothing can be more earnestly recommended to you in his Majesty's Name, than a narrow Enquiry into this Affair, by

Monfieur,

Your most humble Servant.

---

The other runs thus :

July 8. 1685.

Monfieur,

**I**T's unlucky that hitherto you have not been able to find out what we are to expect from this Change in England. In yours of the 13th of the last Month, S. V. you seem to call in question that King's Inclinations to the Common Cause; and you surprize us with your Fears that he may come to forget his Obligations to the King.

Bb 2

With



*With the same Post we receiv'd better News from a sure Hand, yet you are to watch as narrowly as if your Fears were well grounded. There is a great matter in dependance, with relation to the Edict of Nants, which must not be declar'd, till that King's Inclinations be fully known. And yet there is nothing in the world the King desires more eagerly to see done than it, if once it might be done safely. Receiv'd inclos'd an Answer to every one of your Queries, which make use of as occasion offers. Only the last is referr'd to your own discretion, it depending entirely upon your own knowledge of the Person: If he can be brought in, it will be a notable piece of Service. Much may be known, by enquiring exactly how the Prince of Orange stands in the King's Affections, and how the Ministers are affected towards him. For the Hollanders in general, he seem'd on all occasions neither to love nor fear them; nothing has fallen out of late to alter his mind. On Friday Monsieur Less. comes off, who is to shew you his Dispatches, and you are to act in concert with him. I am,*

NUMB.

N U M B. XIV.

Memoirs,  
P. 171.

Some Passages out of the Duke of *Monmouth's* Pocket-Book, that was seiz'd about him in the *West*.

An ORIGINAL.

**L** Came to me at Eleven at Night from 29, Told me 29 could never be brought to believe I knew any thing of that part of the Plot that concern'd Rye-House; but as things went, he must behave himself as if he did believe it, for some reasons that might be for my Advantage. L. desir'd me to write to 29, which I refus'd; but afterwards told me 29 expected it: And I promis'd to write to morrow, if he could call for the Letter at S. L. shew'd a great concern for me, and I believe him sincere; though 3 is of another mind.

Octob.  
13.

L. came as he promis'd, and receiv'd the Letter from 3 seal'd, refusing to read it himself, though I had left it open with S. for that purpose.

14.

L. came to me at S. with a Line or two from 29 very kind, assuring me he believ'd every word in my Letter to be true; and advis'd me to keep hid, till he had an opportunity to express his belief of it some other

20.

Bb 3

way,

way. L. told me that he was to go out of Town next day; and that 29 would send 80 to me in a day or two, whom he assured me I might trust.

25. L. came for me to ----, where 29 was with 80. He receiv'd me pretty well; and said 30 and 50 were the Causes of my Misfortunes, and would ruin me. After some hot words against them, and against S. went away in a good humour.

26. I went to E----, and was in danger of being discover'd by some of Ogelthorp's men, that met me accidentally at the back-door of the Garden.

Nov. 2. A Letter from 29 to be to morrow at seven at night at S. and no body to know it but 80.

3. He came not, there being an extraordinary Council. But 80 brought me a Copy of 50's intercepted Letter, which made rather for me than against me. Bid me come to morrow at the same hour, and to say nothing of the Letter, except 29 spoke of it first.

4. I came and found 29 and L. there. He was very kind, and gave me directions how to manage my business, and what words I should say to 39. He appointed 80 to come to me every Night till my business was ripe, and promised to send with him directions from time to time.

9. L. came from 29, and told me my Business

ness should be done to my mind next Week; and that Q. was my Friend, and had spoke to 39 and D. in my behalf; which he said 29 took very kindly, and had express'd so to her. At parting he told me there should be nothing requir'd of me but what was both safe and honourable. But said there must be something done to blind 39.

L. came to me with the Copy of a Letter I was to sign, to please 39. I desired to know in whose hands it was to be deposited; for I would have it in no hands but 29. He told me it should be so; but if 39 ask'd a Copy, it could not well be refus'd. I referr'd my self entirely to 29's pleasure.

15.

L. came to me from 29, and order'd me to render my self to morrow. Caution'd me to play my part, to avoid Questions as much as possible, and to seem absolutely converted to 39's Interest. Bad me bear with some words that might seem harsh.

24.

I render'd my self. At Night 29 could not dissemble his Satisfaction; press'd my hand; which I remember not he did before, except when I return'd from the French Service. 29 acted his part well, and I too. 39 and D. seem'd not ill pleas'd.

25.

29 took me aside, and falling upon the business of L. R. said he inclin'd to have sav'd him, but was forc'd to it, otherwise he

26.



must have broke with 39. Bid me think no more on't. Coming home, L. told me he fear'd 39 began to smell out 29's Carriage. That ----- said to 39 that morning, that all that was done was but sham.

27. Several told me of the Storm that was brewing. Rumsey was with 39, and was seen to come out crying, That he must accuse a man he lov'd.

Dec. 19. A Letter from 29, bidding me stay till I heard further from him.

Jan. 5. I receiv'd a Letter from L. mark'd by 29. in the Margin, to trust entirely in 10; and that in February I should certainly have leave to return. That Matters were concerting towards it; and that 39 had no suspicion, notwithstanding of my reception here.

Feb. 3. A Letter from L. that my business was almost as well as done; but must be so sudden as not to leave room for 39's Party to counterplot. That it is probable he would chuse Scotland rather than Flanders or this Countrey; which was all one to 29.

16. The sad News of his Death by L. O cruel Fate !----

Note, That by 29 and 39, King Charles and the Duke of York seem to be meant. But I know not what to make of the other Numbers and Letters; and must leave the Reader to his own Conjectures.

NUMB.

## NUMB. XV.

Memoirs,  
p. 174.

A Letter of the late Duke of *Monmouth's* writ in his Retirement in *Holland*, a little before his attempt in the *West*.

## AN ORIGINAL.

I Receiv'd both yours together this morning, and cannot delay you my Answer longer than this Post; though I am afraid it will not please you so much as I heartily wish it may. I have weigh'd all your Reasons, and every thing that you and my other Friends have writ me upon that Subject; and have done it with the greatest Inclinations to follow your Advice, and without prejudice. You may well believe I have had time enough to reflect sufficiently upon our present state, especially since I came hither. But whatever way I turn my thoughts, I find insuperable difficulties. Pray do not think it an effect of Melancholy, for that was never my greatest fault, when I tell you, That in these Three Weeks Retirement in this Place, I have not only look'd back but forward; and the more I consider our present Circumstances, I think them still the more desperate, unless some unforeseen Accident fall out, which I cannot divine nor hope for. [Here follow sixteen lines all in Cypher]

Judge

Judge then what we are to expect, in case we should venture upon any such Attempt at this time. It's to me a vain Argument, that our Enemies are scarce yet well settled, when you consider, That Fear in some, and Ambition in others, have brought them to comply; and that the Parliament being made up for the most part of Members that formerly run our Enemy down; they will be ready to make their Peace as soon as they can, rather than hazard themselves upon an uncertain Bottom. I give you but hints of what, if I had time, I would write you at more length: But that I may not seem obstinate in my own Judgment, or neglect the Advice of my Friends, I will meet you at the Time and Place appointed. But for God's sake, think in the mean time of the Improbabilities that lye naturally in our way; and let us not by struggling with our Chains make them streighter and heavier. For my part I'll run the hazard of being thought any thing, rather than a Rash, Inconsiderate Man. And to tell you my thoughts without disguise, I am now so much in love with a Retir'd Life, that I am never like to be fond of making a Bustle in the World again. I have much more to say, but the Post cannot stay; and I refer the rest till meeting; being entirely

Yours.

NUMB.

## NUMB. XVI.

Memoirs,  
p. 177.

*King James the II'd's Remarkable Speech  
to the Parliament, after the Duke of  
Monmouth's Defeat.*

*My Lords and Gentlemen,*

**A**FTER the Storm that seem'd to be coming upon us when we parted last, I am glad to meet you all again in so great Peace and Quietness; God Almighty be praised, by whose Blessing that Rebellion was suppress'd. — But when I reflect what an Inconsiderable Number of Men began it, and how long they carried it on without any opposition, I hope every body will be convinc'd, That the Militia, which hath hitherto been so much depended on, is not sufficient for such occasions; and that there is nothing but a good Force of well-disciplin'd Troops, in constant Pay, that can defend us from such as either at home or abroad are dispos'd to disturb us. And in truth, my Concern for the Peace and Quiet of my Subjects, as well as for the Safety of the Government, made me think it necessary to increase the Number to the Proportion



portion I have done. This I ow'd as well to the Honour as to the Security of the Nation; whose Reputation was so infinitely expos'd to all our Neighbours, by having lain open to this late wretched Attempt, that it is not to be repaired without keeping such a Body of Men on foot, that none may ever have the thought again, of finding us so miserably unprovided. It is for the support of this great Charge, which is now more than double to what it was, that I ask your Assistance in giving me a Supply answerable to the Expence it brings along with it. And I cannot doubt but what I have begun, so much for the Honour and Defence of the Government, will be continued by you with all the Chearfulness and Readiness that is Requisite for a Work of so great Importance.

*Let no man take exceptions that there are some Officers in the Army, not qualified, according to the late Tests, for their Employments; The Gentlemen, I must tell you, are most of them well known to me; and having formerly serv'd with me in several Occasions, and always approv'd the Loyalty of their Principles by their Practice, I think them fit now to be employed under me: And will deal plainly*

plainly with you, That after having had the benefit of their Services in such time of need and danger, I will neither expose them to Disgrace, nor my self to the want of them, if there should be another Rebellion to make them necessary to me.

I am afraid some men may be so wicked to hope and expect that a difference may happen between you and me upon this Occasion : But when you consider what Advantages have arisen to us in a few Months, by the good understanding we have hitherto had ; what wonderful Effects it hath already produced in the Change of the whole Scene of Affairs abroad, so much more to the Honour of the Nation, and the Figure it ought to make in the World ; and that nothing can hinder a further Progress in this way, to all our satisfactions, but Fears and Jealousies amongst our selves ; I will not apprehend that such a Misfortune can befall us, as a Division, or but a Coldness between me and you : Nor that any thing can shake you in your Steadiness and Loyalty to me, who by God's Blessing will ever make you all Returns of Kindness and Protection ; with a Resolution to venture even my own Life in the Defence of the true Interest of this Kingdom.

N U M B.

Memoirs,  
p. 180.

N U M B. XVII.

Some Passages of a Letter from a Foreign Minister to their Ambassador in *England*, upon the occasion of the King's Speech immediately preceeding; dated November 29. 1685.

Done from the ORIGINAL.

**W**E are now out of pain about the King's Intentions. This last Speech to the Parliament hath sufficiently clear'd all our Doubts, together with what --- has writ upon that Subject. It's no more than what I really expected; for I had always a better opinion of him, than to think he could bear tamely the Fetters which Hereticks would endeavour to impose upon him. For the time to come, I hope he will act en Maistre. Your Conduct there pleases extreamly; and above all, your last Dispatch about what pass'd at your Audience. All you have promis'd shall be made good to a Tittle; and it's hop'd that others will be as zealous to keep their Promises to us. The enclos'd you must deliver, but not till you see the Person has deserv'd it; for I am more and more persuaded, as well as you, that we cannot be too much upon the Reserve with him, &c.

N U M B.

## NUMB. XVIII.

Memoirs;  
p. 189.

The Harangue of the Rector of the  
Jesuits College at Rome, to the Earl of  
Castlemain, upon his Embassy to the  
Pope.

Nouveau  
Voyage d'  
Italie, p.  
259, 260.

**I**N tanto strepitu Mundi plaudentis gra-  
tulantisque Tuo in Urbem adventui, hoc  
est, immortalibus JACOBI II. Magnæ  
Britanniæ Regis in Catholicam Ecclesiam  
meritis, Gregorianum hoc Palladis Athe-  
næum, nec debuet tacere, nec potuit. Quam-  
obrem, ego Literariæ hujus Universitatis  
nomine, primò gratulor INNOC-  
CENT XI. felicitati, quòd Ipso  
regnante, Pontificio accesserit Diademati  
Augusta hæc & Triumphalis Corona; unde  
illud cum Apostolo usurpare jure Meritò va-  
leat, Gaudium meum, & Corona mea.  
Hunc lætissimum ferre Mortalibus Diem,  
longissimi ævi spatio distulerunt Superi,  
tùm ut diuturnis Terrarum votis ingentia  
hæc Cæli dona responderent, tum ut simul  
invenirent regnantem in Anglia Jacobum II.  
Romæ Innocentium XI. Gratulor quoque  
Christiano Orbi, necnon Catholicis Regibus,  
quod tanto Dominatore Britannorum Scep-  
tra



tra gerente, tam grande advenerit, & Ipsorum Coronis adversus Christiani nominis hostes munimentum, & Orthodoxæ Fidei ornamentum. Imminent quippe ab invictissimi Regis Classibus, tum Lybicus prædonibus, tum Asiæ & Palestinæ Littoribus, flammarum procellæ, magis metuendæ quàm Maris. At Tibi, Oceani Regina Magna Britannia, quæ à nostro olim Orbe divisa, nunc gemini facis commercia Mundi; quid non liceat ominari faustitatis sub tanto Principe! Eri-ge spes; erige vota; nec timeas si maxima, sed nisi maxima. Non libet in die hac faustissima commemorare quàm lugubres passa fueris unius ampliùs sæculi spacio, toto Orbe Terrarum admirante atque ingemiscente, catastrophas. Sed si hæc una erat via, quâ Jacobus II. Britannicæ solium ascenderet, prope est ut exclamem, tanti fuisse. Profecto invidabit Tibi Posteritas, non modo præsentium temporum felicitatem, sed & præteritorum Calamitates tam grandi mercede redemptas: eaque, quibus nunc frueris bona, etsi post ingens à Te pretium persolutum Tibi reddita fuerint non à Te coempta arbitritur, sed quadam Superum prodigentiâ dona data. Tibi demum gratulor, præstantissime Orator, quod tam faustum diem, & videris in Angliâ, & detuleris in Urbem. Nam de Sapientiâ Tuâ, quâ per eruditissi-  
mos

*mos libros Hæresim profligasti, nihil attinet dicere : nihil de Fortitudine, quâ Carceres ipsos pro Catholicâ Religione tuendâ, non tam pertulisti, quàm decorasti : nil de Prudentiâ, Nobilitate, cæterisque dotibus Tuis. Hoc unum universa Tua decora comprehendit, quod ad maximum totius Regni negotium, hoc est ; ut splendidissimâ fungereris apud Innocentium P. M. legatione, Jacobus II. Magnæ Britanniae Rex maximus, te unum elegit, quia unus dignus erat eligi, alter eligere.*

---

The Speech of the Rector of the Colledge of Jesuits, to his Excellency Roger Earl of Castlemain.

S I R.

**Y**O U must not think this Colledge alone can be mute; and if they could, their Silence must be a Crime, at a Time when this City is filled with Universal Joy, upon the News of your Excellency's Arrival; and all Places resound the Praises of James the Second, and the Obligations the Catholick Church has to that Illustrious Prince. I, in the Name of this Learned Body, do in the first place congratulate thee, Innocent, in whose Reign this flourishing Imperial

C c

rial

rial Crown is added to the Papal Diadem. It is now your Holiness can properly use that Apostolick Expression, My Joy and my Crown. Heaven has deferr'd this happy Day thus long, That so great a Blessing might not be obtained, without long and unwearied Prayers; and at last effected, when Two such Princes as James and Innocent should concur to Reign, the one in England, and the other in Rome. What a support have all Catholick Kings gained by this Accession! What an Honour has the Orthodox Faith receiv'd, and what a Defence against the Enemies of the Name of Christ! The Thunder of his Invincible Fleet will strike greater Terror into the Pyrates of Barbary and the Levant, than Storms and Waves can do. How highly blest art Thou, O Britain! Empress of the Ocean; once secluded from the Earth, now Mistress of the Commerce of the Eastern and Western World? What Prosperity mayst thou not hope for, under the Reign of so Excellent a Prince! Raise thy Hopes, Raise thy Courage; and banish all unjust and unseasonable Fears. I have no Inclination at this time to recount those Disasters and Calamities which England has been the Theatre for above an Age past, to the Grief and Astonishment of the rest of the World. But if Providence has  
made

made these the Steps for James the Second to mount the Throne, I can hardly refrain declaring how cheaply thou hast purchased so great a Blessing. It is certain, their present Happiness will create Envy in succeeding Times; and however dear it has cost them, Posterity will esteem it more the Bounty and Profusion of Heaven, than a Recompence of their Sufferings. In the last place, I must congratulate your Excellency, who has first seen this happy Day at home, and has next been the Messenger to bring it hither: I shall not here presume to praise your Great Wisdom, your Learned Writings against Heresy; that steady Courage you have shewn in those many Prisons you have honour'd for your Zeal to the True Religion; your prudent Conduct, or your other extraordinary Qualities: All these are summ'd up in one; and your Character is in fine compleated, by the Choice your Great Master has made of you, to sustain the most considerable Affair of his Kingdom, The present Glorious Embassy: In which all the World must own Him to be the most competent Judge, and You the fittest Person.



Memoirs,  
p. 208.

## N U M B. XIX.

*The Answer of the Vice-President and Fellows of Magdalen-Colledge, Oxon, before the Ecclesiastical Commissioners; Why they could not in Conscience comply with the King's Mandate.*

THE said Vice-President, and other deputed Fellows answered and said, That the said Colledge of *St. Mary Magdalen* in *Oxon* is a Body Corporate, governed by Local Statutes, granted and confirmed to them by his Majesty's Royal Predecessors, King *Henry* the 6th, for Him and His Heirs and Successors, under the Great Seal of *England*; which are also since confirmed by several other Letters Patents of others of his Majesty's Royal Predecessors, under the Great Seal of *England*. That by the said Statutes of the College (to the observation of which each Fellow is sworn) it is ordered, That the Person elected President thereof, shall be a Man of good Life and Reputation, approved Understanding, and good Temper, Discreet, Provident, and Circumspect, both in Spiritual and

and Temporal Affairs. And at the time of Election of a President, the said Fellows are bound by the said Statutes, to take an Oath that they shall nominate none to that Office, but such as are, or have been Fellows of the said Collodge, or of *New-Colledge* in *Oxon*; or if they are not actually Fellows at that time of Election, that they be such as have left their Fellowships in their respective Colledges upon credible accounts. And when two qualified persons shall be nominated at the time of Election, by the greater number of all the Fellows, to the said Office of President; the thirteen Seniors also swear that they will Elect one of them, whom in their Consciences they think most proper and sufficient, most discreet, most useful, and best qualified for the Place; without any regard to love, hatred, favour, or fear. And every Fellow when he is first admitted into his Fellowship in the said Collodge, swears that he will inviolably keep and observe all the Statutes and Ordinances of the Collodge, and every thing therein contained, so far as does or may concern him, according to the plain, literal, and grammatical sense and meaning thereof, and as much as in him lies will cause the

same to be kept and observed by others ; and that he will not procure any Dispensation contrary to his aforesaid Oath, or any part thereof, nor contrary to the Statutes and Ordinances to which it relates, or any of them ; nor will he endeavour that such Dispensations shall be procured by any other, or others, publicly or privately, directly or indirectly. And if it shall happen that any Dispensation of this sort, of whatsoever Authority it shall be, whether in general or particular, or under what form of Words, soever it be granted, that he will neither make use of it, nor in any sort consent thereunto. That upon Notice of the Death of Dr. *Clark*, Late President of the said Colledge, the Vice-President called a Meeting of the said Fellows, in order to the appointing a day for the Election of a new President, and the 13th of *April* was the time prefix'd with power to prorogue the same as they should see cause, till the 15th, beyond which time they could not statutably defer their Election ; and in pursuance thereof a Citation, or Premonition, was fix'd upon the Chapel-door of the said Colledge, signifying the same, and by which the absent Fellows were Summoned to repair home, as the

Sta-

Statute in the Case requires. And the said Vice-President, and other deputed Fellows farther say, That on the 11th of *April* aforesaid, they received his Majesty's Letters Mandatory, to elect and admit *Mr. Anthony Farmer* President of the said Colledge: But forasmuch as the said Vice-President, and Fellows, apprehended the right of Election to be in them, and believed his Majesty never intended to dispossess them of their Rights; And forasmuch as the said *Mr. Farmer* had never been Fellow either of *Magdalen*, or *New-Colledge* in *Oxon*, and had not those Qualifications which in and by the said Statutes of the Colledge are required in the Character of a President, as they in their Consciences did, or do verily believe; and in regard that they could not comply with his Majesty's Letter, without the violation of their Oaths, and hazard of their legal Interest and Property, wherewith they are by the Statutes possessed, and which by their Oaths they are bound to maintain; they represented the same by their humble Petition to his Majesty; And having deferred their Election of a President to the last day limited by their Statutes, then they proceeded



to Election, and having first received the Eucharist, and taken the said Oaths, as the Statutes enjoin, to chuse a Person so qualified as is before expressed, they did Elect the Reverend Mr. *John Hough*, B. D. and one of the Fellows of their Colledge, a Person every way qualified to be President; who has been since confirmed by the Bishop of *Winton* their Visitor, as the Statutes of the said Colledge direct.

And that they might not lye under His Majesty's Displeasure by their Proceedings, they did on the 19th of *April* make an humble representation thereof to His Majesty, by his Grace the Duke of *Ormond*, Chancellor of the University of *Oxon*, setting forth their indispensable Obligations to observe their Founders Statutes.

All which Matters the Vice-President and other deputed Fellows, do humbly offer to your Lordships, and pray to be dismissed with your Lordship's favour,

## NUMB. XX.

Memoirs,  
p. 210.

*The Petition of the said Vice-President and  
Fellows, offer'd to King James.*

*Humbly sheweth,*

**T**Hat upon the 27th of *August* we receiv'd your Majesty's Letters Mandatory, Dated *August* 14th, requiring us to admit the Right Reverend Father in God *Samuel* Lord Bishop of *Oxon*, to be our President; and dispensing with all Statutes and Constitutions to the contrary. It is an unexpressible Affliction to us, to find our selves reduced to such an extremity that either we must disobey Your Majesty's Royal Command, contrary to our own Inclinations, and that constant course of Loyalty which we have shew'd in all instances hitherto upon all occasions whatsoever; or else break our Founder's Statutes, and deliberately perjure our selves.

For our Founder hath obliged us under Oath, when we came in Fellows, inviolably to observe his Statutes; and one Clause therein enjoyns us never to admit, or make use of Dispensation  
granted

granted by any Authority whatsoever, whereby we may be absolved from the same. In this Statute for the Election of a President, he commands us upon Oath to Elect such a Person into the place of President within 15 days after the vacancy, who either is, or has been Fellow of our own, or *New-Colledge*; Which we represented to Your Majesty in our humble Petition, sign'd *April 9th*, wherein we offered our selves ready to Elect any Person capable of the same, whom your Majesty should be pleased to recommend; and having waited the utmost time limited by our Statutes, and receiv'd no Answer to that effect, we did then according to the exigence of our Statutes (having first taken the holy Eucharist, and our several Oaths to that purpose) nominate and Elect such a Person, as we in our Consciences did believe to be every way pualified for that Place: By which Act of ours, we have conveyed all that right to him, which our Founder hath intrusted with us; and it does not lie in our power to admit any other. Our Founder in another Statute obligeth us under the pain of Perjury, a dreadful Anathema, and eternal Damnation, not to suffer any of his Statutes to be altered, infringed,  
or

or dispensed with, and commands us under the same Sacred Obligations, not to execute any Orders or Decree, whatsoever, contrary or repugnant to the said Statutes; by which said Statutes and Oaths, we are utterly incapacitated to admit the said Reverend Father in God to be our President..

May it please Your Sacred Majesty, to give us leave to lay this our Case, and our selves, with all submission, at Your Royal Feet, most earnestly beseeching Your Sacred Majesty, to extend to us Your humble Petitioners, the Grace and Tenderneſs which Your Majesty hath vouchsafed to all Your other Subjects; and not to believe us guilty of any obstinacy or undutifulness, Crimes which our Souls abhor; but to receive us into Your Majesty's Grace and Favour, the greatest temporal Blessing which our Hearts can wish.

And Your humble Petitioners shall Always (as in Duty bound) pray to Almighty God, to bless your Majesty with a long and happy Reign over us, and afterwards to receive You to an immortal Crown of Glory.

NUMB.



Memoirs,  
p. 227.

## N U M B. XXI.

A Copy of a Letter of the *Irish* Clergy to King James, in favour of the Earl of Tyrconnel; found among Bishop Tyrrel's Papers in Dublin.

SIR,

The State  
of Ireland  
under K.  
James, by  
Dr. King,  
p. 294,  
295.

Since it has pleased the Almighty Providence, by placing your Majesty in the Throne of your Ancestors to give you both Authority and Occasion of exercising those Royal Virtues which alone do merit, and would acquire you the Crown to which you were born; We, though comprehended in the general Clemency and Indulgence which you extend to the rest of our Fellow Subjects, are nevertheless so remote from your Majesty's Presence; that our Prayers can have no access to you, but by a Mediator. And since of all others the Earl of Tyrconnel did first espouse, and chiefly maintain, these Twenty five Years last past, the Cause of your poor oppressed Roman-Catholick Clergy, against our many and powerful Adversaries, and is now the only Subject of your Majesty, under whose Fortitude and Popularity in this Kingdom, we dare cheer-  
fully

fully and with assurance own our Loyalty, and assert your Majesty's Interest, Do make it our humble Suit to your Majesty, That you will be pleased to lodge your Authority over us in his Hands, to the Terror of the Faction, and Encouragement of your faithful Subjects here; since his Dependance on your Majesty is so great, that we doubt not but that they will receive him with such Acclamations as the long-captiv'd Israelites did their Redeemer Mordecai. And since your Majesty in Glory and Power does equal the mighty Ahashuerus, and the Virtue and Beauty of your Queen is as true a Parallel to his ador'd Hester, we humbly beseech she may be heard as our great Patroness, against that Haman, whose Pride and Ambition of being honoured as his Master, may have hitherto kept us in Slavery. And though we wish none the fate of so dreadful an Example, but rather a timely Penitence and Conversion; we yet humbly crave your Majesty's Protection against all such, if it may consist with your Royal Wisdom and Pleasure, to which we with all humility submit, in the establishing of the said Earl of Tyrconnel in such Authority here, as may secure us in the Exercise of our Function to the Honour of God, and offering up our Prayers and Sacrifice

*vice for the continuation of your Majesty's long and prosperous Reign over us.*

*Dublin, the  
of July,  
1685.*

Your Majesty's most  
Dutiful and Obedient Subjects.

---

NUMB.

N U M B. XXII.

Memoirs,  
P. 237.

Colonel *Luttrel's* Order, forbidding  
above Five Protestants meeting any  
where, &c.

State of  
Ireland,  
&c. p. 430,  
431.

By the Governor of *Dublin*, June 18. 1690.

**W** Hereas several Disaffected Persons  
of the Protestant Religion, are of  
late come to this City of *Dublin*, and some  
of them Arm'd with Swords, Pistols, and  
other Weapons, contrary to his Majesty's ex-  
press Commands by his Royal Proclamation,  
bearing Date the 20th day of July, 1689.

I. These are therefore to Will and Re-  
quire all Men whatsoever, of the Protestant  
Religion, now residing or being within the  
said City of *Dublin*, or within the Liber-  
ties of St. Sepulchre Donnor, or Thomas  
Court, who are not House-keepers, or have  
not followed some lawful Vocation therein  
these Three Months past, to depart within  
Twenty four Hours after the Publication  
hereof, out of the said City and Liberties,  
and repair to their respective Habitations,  
or usual places of Abode in the Countrey, up-  
on



on pain of Death, or Imprisonment, and to be farther proceeded against as Contemners of his Majesty's Royal Commands, and as Persons designing the Disturbance of the Publick Peace.

II. And likewise, That all Protestants within the said City and Liberties, not being of his Majesty's most Honourable Privy Council, nor in his Army, or actual Service, shall within the time aforesaid deliver up all their Arms, both Offensive and Defensive, and all their Ammunition, into his Majesty's Stores in the said City, upon pain of Death.

III. And that no Protestant whatsoever, do presume at his peril, to walk or go in the Streets, from Ten of the Clock at Night till Five in the Morning, nor at any time when there is an Alarum. In which case all such Persons are required for their Safety, and for the Security of the Publick, to keep within Doors till such an Alarum is over.

IV. And Lastly, For the prevention of Riots and unlawful Assemblies, These are therefore to Will and Require all the said Protestants, that no greater number of them than Five shall Meet and Converse at any time, either in any House within the said City or Liberties, over and above the  
Family

*Family of the House ; or in the Streets and Fields in and about the same, or elsewhere ; Hereby declaring, That all Persons who shall offend against any Clause in this present Order, shall suffer Death, or such other Punishment, as a Court-Martial shall think fit.*

---

D d

NUMB.

Memoirs,  
p. 247.

*Memoirs  
pour servir  
al' Historie  
de la Paix  
de Ryswick  
par Du  
Mont. Tom.  
2. p.66,67.*

N U M B. XXIII.

The French King's Declaration, publish'd  
at his Camp at *Arnheim*, to oblige the  
*Hollanders* to surrender their Countrey  
to him, Anno 1672.

De par le Roy.

**S**A Majesté considerant combien il a plu à  
Dieu de benir ses justes desseins, & faire  
prosperer les enterprises, qu'il a faites depuis  
son arrivée à la Campagne; Et voulant  
traiter avec la derniere douceur les Peuples  
des Provinces, où elle pourra etendre ses  
Victoires: & afin de leur faire scaveir ce  
qu'ils auront à faire pour se rendre dignes  
de ses bontez, sa Majesté a fait declarer, &  
declare par la presente, que tous les Habi-  
tans des Villes de Hollande, qui se rendront  
volontairement à son obéissance, & rece-  
vront les Troupes, quelle trouvera bon de  
leur envoyer pour leur sûreté & pour leur  
defense, seront non seulement traitez aussi  
favorablement qu'ils pourroient desirer;  
mais aussi seront maintenus dans tous leurs  
Privileges & Franchises, & auront toute  
liberté de conscience avec le libre exercice de  
leur Religion.

Mais

*Mais, au contraire, que ceux qui ne se voudront pas soumettre, de quelque qualité ou condition qu'ils soient, tâcheront de résister aux forces de sa Majesté par l'inondation de leurs Dignes, ou autrement, seront punis de la dernière rigueur. Et cependant on exercera toutes sortes d'hostilité contre tous ceux, qui voudront s'opposer aux desseins de sa Majesté, & lors que les glaces ouvriront le passage de tous côtés, sa Majesté ne donnera aucun Quartier aux Habitans des Villes, mais donnera ordre que leurs biens soient pillés, & leurs maisons brûlées. Fait à l'Armée devant Aernhem ce 24 Juin 1672.*

Signé,

LOUIS.

Et plus bas,

Le Tellier.



---

The Declaration.

**H**IS Majesty considering how it has pleas'd God to bless his just Designs, and prosper his Undertakings, since his Arrival in the Army; and it being his Intention to treat the People over whom he shall extend his Victories, with the highest Clemency; to the intent therefore that they may deserve his great Goodness, his Majesty has caused to be declared, and does by these presents declare, That all the Inhabitants of the Cities of Holland, who shall voluntarily submit to him, and receive the Troops he shall send for their Security and Defence, shall be treated as favourably as they can desire; and shall be maintained in all their Privileges and Immunities, and have Liberty of Conscience, and the Free Exercise of their Religion.

On the contrary, All of whatever Quality and Condition, who shall refuse to comply with these Offers, and shall resist his Majesty's Forces, either by the Inundation of their Diques, or otherwise, shall be punished with the utmost Rigor. At present, all Hostilities shall be used against those who  
oppose

*oppose his Majesty's Designs; and when the Ice shall open a Passage on all sides, his Majesty will not give any Quarter to the Inhabitants of such Cities, but give Order that their Goods be plunder'd, and their Houses burnt. Given at the Camp before Arnheim, this 24th of June, 1672.*

Sign'd,

LOUIS.

And underneath,

*La Tellier*

---

FINIS.

---

---

*Books Printed for and Sold by*  
**Tim. Goodwin.**

**T**HE History of the Revolution in *Portugal* in the Year 1640; or an Account of their Revolt from *Spain*, and setting the Crown on the Head of *Don John* of *Braganza*, Father to *Don Pedro* the present King, and *Katherine*, Queen Dowager of *England*: Written in *French* by the Excellent Pen of the Abbot *Vertat*, (Author of the History of the Revolutions in *Sueden*;) and done into *English*. *Twelves*.

*Lex Parliamentaria*; or a Treatise of the Law and Custom of the Parliaments of *England*, By *G. P. Esq*; *Octavo*.

Memoirs of *Denzil* Lord *Holles*, Baron of *Isfield* in *Sussex* from the Year 1641, to 1648. *Octavo*.

The *Roman* History, from the building of the City, to the perfect Settlement of the Empire by *Augustus Caesar*; containing the Space of 727 Years; design'd as well for the understanding of the *Roman* Authors, as the *Roman* Affairs. The Fourth Edition, carefully revis'd, and much improv'd: By *Lawrence Echard*, A. M. of *Christ-College* in *Cambridge*. Vol. I. *Octavo*.

The *Roman* History, from the Settlement of the Empire by *Augustus Caesar*, to the Removal of the Imperial Seat by *Constantine the Great*, containing the Space of 355 Years. Vol. II. For the Use of his Highness the Duke of *Glocester*. The Second Edition. By *Lawrence Echard*, A. M. *Octavo*.

*Politica Sacra & Civilis*: Or a model of Civil and Ecclesiastical Government; wherein, besides the Positive Doctrine concerning State and Church in general, are debated the principal Controversies of the Times, concerning the Constitution of the State and Church of *England*, tending to Righteousness, Truth, and Peace.

By

## Books Printed for T. Goodwin.

By *George Lawson*, Rector of *More* in the Country of *Salop*. The Second Edition. *Octavo*.

An Account of *Denmark*, as it was in the year 1692. The Third Edition. *Octavo*.

An Account of *Sueden*: Together with an Extract History of that Kingdom. *Octavo*.

Of Wisdom. Three Books. Written Originally in *French* by the *Sieur de Charron*. With an Account of the Author: Made *English* by *George Stanhope*, D. D. late Fellow of *King's-College* in *Cambridge*: From the best Edition, Corrected and Enlarged by the Author a little before his Death. In Two Volumes. *Octavo*.

A New Voyage to *Italy*: With curious Observations on several other Countries; as, *Germany*, *Switzerland*, *Savoy*, *Geneva*, *Flanders*, and *Holland*. Together with useful Instructions for those who shall travel thither. Done out of *French*. The Second Edition, enlarged above one Third, and enriched with several New Figures. By *Maximillian Mission*, Gent. In Two Volumes. *Octavo*.

A Compleat Body of Chirurgical Operations, containing the whole Practice of Surgery: With Observations and Remarks on each Case. Amongst which are inserted the several ways of delivering Women in Natural and Unnatural Labours. The whole Illustrated with Copper Plates, explaining the several Bandages, Sutures, and divers useful Instruments. By *M. de la Vanguion*, M. D. and Intendant of the Royal Hospitals about *Paris*. Faithfully done in *English*. *Octavo*.

A Relation of a Voyage made in the Years 1695, 1696, 1697, on the Coasts of *Africa*, *Streights of Magellan*, *Brazil*, *Cayenna*, and the *Antilles*, by a Squadron of *French* Men of War, under the Command of *M. de Gennes*. By the *Sieur Froger*, Volunteer-Engineer, on Board the *English Falcon*. Illustrated with divers strange Figures, drawn to the Life. *Octavo*.

Travels into divers parts of *Europe* and *Asia*, undertaken by the *French King's* Order, to discover a new way by Land into *China*: Containing many curious Remarks in Natural Philosophy, Geography, Hydrography, and History. Together with a Description of *Great Tartary*, and of the different People who inhabit there. By *Father Avril*, of the Order of the *Jesuits*. Done out



## Books Printed for T. Goodwin.

- out of French. To which is added a Supplement extracted from *Hakluyt* and *Purchas*, giving an Account of several Journeys over Land from *Russia*, *Persia*, and the *Mogul's* Country, to *China*. Together with the Roads and Distances of Places. *Twelves*.
- A Compendium of Universal History, from the Beginning of the World, to the Reign of the Emperor *Charles the Great*. Written Originally in *Latin* by *Monfieur Le Clerc*. Done into *English*. *Octavo*.
- A Political Essay; or a Summary review of the Kings and Government of *England* since the *Norman Conquest*. By *W. Prynne*, Esq. *Octavo*.
- The Art of preserving and restoring Health; explaining the Nature and Cause of the Distempers that afflict Mankind: Also shewing that every man is or may be his own best Physitian. To which is added a Treatise of the most Simple and Effectual Remedies for the Diseases of Men and Women. Written in *French* by *M. Flamand*, M.D. and faithfully translated into *English*. *Twelves*.
- A Defence of the Thirty Nine Articles of the Church of *England*; Written in *Latin* by *J. Ellis*, S.T.D. Now done into *English*. To which are added *Lambeth* Articles. Together with the Judgment of *Bishop Andrews*, *Dr. Overall*, and other Eminent and Learned Men upon them. *Twelves*.
- Belshamira*, or the Mistress: A Comedy: As it is Acted by their Majesties Servants. Written by the Honourable *Sir Charles Sedley*, Baronet.

